# Adaptive estimation in regression and complexity of approximation of random fields 

Dissertation<br>zur Erlangung des akademischen Grades<br>doctor rerum naturalium (Dr. rer. nat.)<br>im Fach Mathematik

eingereicht an der<br>Mathematisch-Naturwissenschaftlichen Fakultät II<br>der Humboldt-Universität zu Berlin

von Dipl.-Math. Nora Serdyukova
geboren am 17.08.1973 in Leningrad (Sankt-Petersburg)

Präsident der Humboldt-Universität zu Berlin

Prof. Dr. Dr. h.c. Christoph Markschies

Dekan der Mathematisch-Naturwissenschaftlichen Fakultät II

Prof. Dr. Peter Frensch

Gutachter/Gutachterin:

Prof. Dr. Vladimir Spokoinyi, Berlin

Prof. Dr. Oleg Lepski, Marseille

Prof. Dr. Angelika Rohde, Hamburg

Tag der Verteidigung: 14.05.2010

To my mother Svetlana

## Abstract

In this thesis we study adaptive nonparametric regression with noise misspecification and the complexity of approximation of random fields in dependence of the dimension.

First, we consider the problem of pointwise estimation in nonparametric regression with heteroscedastic additive Gaussian noise. We use the method of local approximation applying the Lepski method for selecting one estimate from the set of linear estimates obtained by the different degrees of localization. This approach is combined with the "propagation conditions" on the choice of critical values of the procedure, as suggested recently by Spokoiny and Vial [66]. The "propagation conditions" are relaxed for the model with misspecified covariance structure. Specifically, the model with unknown mean and variance is approximated by the one with the parametric assumption of local linearity of the mean function and with an incorrectly specified covariance matrix. We show that this procedure allows a misspecification of the covariance matrix with a relative error up to $o\left(\frac{1}{\log n}\right)$, where $n$ is the sample size. The quality of estimation is measured in terms of nonasymptotic "oracle" risk bounds.

We then turn to the $\varepsilon$-approximation of $d$-parametric random fields of tensor product-type by means of $n$-term partial sums of the Karhunen-Loève expansion. The analysis is restricted to the average case setting. The quantity of interest is the information complexity $n(\varepsilon, d)$ describing the minimal number of terms in the partial sums, which guarantees an error not exceeding a given level $\varepsilon$. The behavior of $n(\varepsilon, d)$ as $d \rightarrow \infty$ is the subject of our study. It was shown by Lifshits and Tulyakova [44] that this problem inherits the curse of dimensionality (intractabil-
ity) phenomenon. We present the exact asymptotic expression for the information complexity $n(\varepsilon, d)$.

## Acknowledgements

It is a great pleasure to write this page. I would like to thank my supervisor Vladimir Spokoinyi for introducting me to the challenging world of adaptive methods. I am deeply grateful to my friends and colleagues: Gilles Blanchard, Rada Daković (Matić), Le-Minh Ho, Anastasia and Vladislav Kolodko, Nicole Krämer, Volker Krätschmer, Anna Martius (Levina), John G. M. Schoenmakers and Nataliya Togobytska for their sympathy and help. I am greatly indebted to Alexandre B. Tsybakov for his support, important comments and constructive criticism. Many thanks go to Andre Beinrucker and Peter Mathé for the careful translation of the abstract into German and for valuable comments. I thank the secretary of our research group Cristine Schneider for her help in thousands of administrative problems, and for being always so friendly and nice. I wish to thank the Weierstrass Institute for Applied Analysis and Stochastics (WIAS) which made the completion of this thesis possible. Special thanks are due to the WIAS library and especially to Ulrike Hintze and Ilka Kleinod.

The last chapter of this thesis was partially written while the author was visiting the Institut für Matematische Stochastik, Georg-August-Universität, Göttingen, and was supported by the grants RFBR 05-01-00911 and RFBR-DFG 04-01-04000. I am thankful to the supervisor of this part of the thesis Mikhail A. Lifshits for the formulation of the problem, and to Manfred Denker for his support and for providing excellent working conditions.

## Contents

1 Introduction
1.1 Nonparametric versus parametric methods ..... 1
1.2 Local approximation ..... 6
1.2.1 Local polynomial estimators: basic properties ..... 6
1.2.2 Mean squared error of local polynomial estimators ..... 10
1.2.3 Method of local approximation: general set-up ..... 16
1.3 Information-based complexity and approximation in increasing dimension ..... 18
2 Adaptive estimation under noise misspecification in regression ..... 21
2.1 Model and set-up ..... 22
2.2 Quasi-maximum local likelihood estimation ..... 23
2.3 Adaptive procedure ..... 27
2.3.1 Algorithm ..... 29
2.3.2 Choice of the critical values ..... 30
2.4 Theoretical study ..... 32
2.4.1 Local parametric risk bounds ..... 32
2.4.2 Upper bound for the critical values ..... 36
2.4.3 Quality of estimation in the nearly parametric case: small modeling bias and propagation property ..... 44
2.4.4 Quality of estimation in the nonparametric case: the oracle result 52
2.4.5 Oracle risk bounds for estimators of the regression function andits derivatives53
2.5 Rates of convergence ..... 62
2.5.1 Minimax rate of spatially adaptive local polynomial estimators ..... 62
2.5.2 SMB, the bias-variance trade-off and the rate of convergence ..... 70
2.6 Auxiliary results ..... 74
3 Dependence on the dimension for complexity of approximation of random fields ..... 81
3.1 Introduction and set-up ..... 82
3.2 Main result: the exact intractability rate in increasing dimension ..... 87
3.3 Proof of the main result ..... 88
3.3.1 Nonlattice case ..... 91
3.3.2 Lattice case ..... 93
3.4 Appendix. Examples of tensor product-type random fields ..... 96
3.4.1 Wiener-Chentsov random field ..... 97
3.4.2 Completely tucked Brownian sheet ..... 97
3.4.3 Centered Gaussian processes ..... 98
3.4.4 Multivariate Anderson-Darling processes ..... 99
Bibliography101

## Chapter 1

## Introduction

### 1.1 Nonparametric versus parametric methods

In nonparametric estimation the balance between the approximation error (bias) and the variance of the estimator, the so-called bias-variance trade-off, plays a key role. The bias part depends on the regularity properties of the unobserved signal. Often, for example in image denoising, see [32] and the references therein, this signal has spatially inhomogeneous smoothness. This prompts the idea to adapt statistical methods to the spatially varying smoothness of the function to be recovered from the noisy data.

On the other side, there exists the powerful classical theory of parametric estimation, see [26], where the underlying data distribution $\mathbb{P}$ belongs to a parametric family $\mathcal{P}=\left(\mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}, \boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta\right)$ described by a finite-dimensional parameter $\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta \subset \mathbb{R}^{p}$. Obviously, the assumption that the parametric model holds globally, i.e., that there exists a parameter $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{0} \in \Theta$ such that $\mathbb{P}=\mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}_{0}}$, is too restrictive. It is hopeless to
believe that the real data indeed follow some parametric model or even can be well approximated by it globally.

One way out of this situation is to increase the number of parameters of the model, increasing the dimension of the parameter set $\Theta$. This increases dramatically the complexity of the model and may, especially for high-dimensional data, make the problem computationally unfeasible. See Chapter 3 for an example of a such problem. One can also approximate a high- or infinite-dimensional parameter set $\Theta$ by a dense sequence of low-dimensional subsets"sieves" $\left\{\Theta_{p}\right\}, p=1,2, \ldots$. See [73] for details. The simplest example of sieves is given by projection estimators, when the signal $f$ is considered as a series expansion with respect to some functional basis. One tries to approximate $f$ by the finite sums of this expansion, that is by its projection on the linear span of the first $N$ basis functions, see [72]. The crucial problem is to decide how large $N$ should be in order to provide a satisfactory level of approximation error. Chapter 3 of this thesis addresses to the problem of approximation of random fields of specific "tensor-product" type by the finite sums of the Karhunen-Loève expansion.

Another idea to make a parametric model more flexible is to fix a small number of parameters, that is, the dimension $p$ of the set $\Theta$, but to reduce the amount of the data. This leads to the local parametric approach dating back to the book by Katkovnik [31] and papers [29], 30], where he suggested the method of local approximation. This approach was further developed with application to image denoising, see [32], [20] and the references therein. For local polynomial fitting see [17]. An interesting development in the direction of local-likelihood estimation, closely connected with the ideas of [2] and [75], is due to Loader [45], Polzehl and Spokoiny [55], Belomestny and Spokoiny [6]. A fruitful application of this approach is to change-point detection
in time series, see [63], 65], [11].
In order to compare the method of local approximation with the projection estimation described above, let us consider the following example. Fix a reference point $x \in \mathbb{R}$. By the Taylor theorem any function which is $p$ times differentiable on the closed interval $[x-h, x+h]$ and $p+1$ times differentiable on the open interval $(x-h, x+h)$ can be expanded with respect to the polynomial basis $f(t) \approx f_{p}(t)=f(x)+f^{\prime}(x)(t-x)+\cdots+f^{(p)}(t-x)^{p} / p!$ for any $t \in(x-h, x+h)$. Here $N=p$ is fixed; we aim to choose the width of the interval $h$ by the data. If the bandwidth $h$ is sufficiently small, the class of such functions is large and $f_{p}(t)$ can serve as a reasonable estimator of the value of the unknown signal $f(t)$ for $t$ close to $x$. This idea leads to the method of local approximation, see Section 1.2 for details. Due to the dependence on $x$ this approach is nonparametric or local parametric.

The most important problem is the detection of the width $h$ of the interval providing a satisfactory quality of approximation. If the bandwidth is chosen too large it will result in a large approximation error (bias). Small $h$ will improve the bias, but because the number of data points falling in this interval will also be small, the variance of the estimator will be large. In the projection estimation framework the number of basis functions $N$ plays a similar role. The larger $N$ is the smaller is the modeling bias, and the larger is the variance. Thus we come back to the trade-off between bias and variance, that is to the problem of the choice of a "good" bandwidth.

If the function $f$ would be known or its smoothness would be given, then the bandwidth $h$ would be easy to select. Unfortunately, in most real life problems no information about the regularity properties of the underlying signal is available. Thus
we need to construct a data-driven method which would adapt itself automatically to the properties of the function $f$ and, particularly, to its probably spatially inhomogeneous smoothness. One way of doing this is, instead of considering the single bandwidth $h$, to take a finite grid (usually of geometric type) of bandwidths $\left\{h_{k}\right\}_{k=1}^{K}$ producing a growing sequence of nested neighborhoods of the reference point $x$. This pointwise-adaptive bandwidth (scale, localizing scheme) selection is based on the idea known as Lepski's method. This approach was proposed in a series of papers [38], [39], [40]. The idea is as follows: suppose that a point $x$ and some method of localization (a smoothing kernel) are fixed. One calculates a sequence of estimators corresponding to different scales, and the procedure searches for the largest local vicinity of the center of approximation $x$, that is for the largest bandwidth, for which the corresponding estimator is not rejected by the data. The calculated estimators are compared by the algorithm, and the adaptively selected bandwidth is the largest one such that the corresponding estimator does not differ significantly from the estimators with smaller bandwidths. Among other applications, this idea was further applied by Katkovnik as the intersection of the confidence intervals (ICI) rule (see [32]), by Spokoiny as the fitted log-likelihood (FLL) technique (see [33]) and as a two sample likelihood ratio test with application to change-point detection (see [63], 65]). The interesting recent paper by Reiß, Rozenholc, and Cuenod [58] presents a Lepski-type method based on the Wald-test statistics for robust and quantile regression estimation.

It is well known from approximation theory that the smoothness of a function can be expressed via the quality of its approximation by a sufficiently regular kernel smoother (see [68]). The Taylor theorem can be considered from this point of view as well. Let the degree $p$ of the Taylor polynomial be fixed. Then the quality of
approximation of a function $f$ by the finite sum of the Taylor expansion and the width $h$ of the proper vicinity of approximation also express the smoothness of $f$. Thus the procedure described above intrinsically adapts directly to the local smoothness properties of the unknown function $f$. One can also select simultaneously a kernel and a bandwidth, see the second part of 42].

Since the seminal paper by Lepski [38] dating back to 1990, the local pointwise adaptive methods based on Lepski's approach have showed their power being applied to image denoising [55], [20], [32], robust and quantile regression [58], change-point detection and volatility estimation in time series [63], [48], 65], [11], density estimation [10] and inverse problems, see [47] and the references therein. This list is not complete and just shows the possible spectrum of application. A new technique originating from [38] for spatially adaptive local constant approximation employing local-likelihood methods was suggested in [33. This approach is based on the assumption that a regression function can be well approximated by a constant in a vicinity of a given point. The suggested test statistics $T_{l k}, 1 \leq l<k \leq K$ are based on the fitted local-likelihood (FLL), that is on the difference between the value of the local log-likelihood corresponding to the smaller scale at the point of its maximum and the maximum of the local log-likelihood corresponding to the larger scale. These statistics are used for data-driven detection of the size and shape of the homogeneity area. Lepski's selection rule from [38], see also [41], is applied to the FLL-statistics, whereby chooses an adaptive scale (bandwidth $h_{\widehat{k}}$ ) as the largest for which the values of $T_{l m}$ are sufficiently small:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{k}=\max \left\{k \leq K: T_{l m} \leq \mathfrak{z}_{l}, l<m \leq k\right\} \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

The crucial problem for such adaptive methods is the choice of critical values $\mathfrak{z}_{1}, \ldots, \mathfrak{z}_{K-1}$. A "propagation approach" for choosing the parameters in the selection rule (3.5) is advocated in [33] and [66]. The idea is to select the critical values to provide the prescribed behavior of the procedure in the simplest parametric situation. Then the procedure should work well even when the parametric assumption is violated.

In [33] and [66] the local constant fit is considered. In Chapter 20 we generalize the FLL method to the local linear approximation in regression with heteroscedastic Gaussian noise, and the "propagation approach" is justified for the case of misspecified covariance structure.

### 1.2 Local approximation

### 1.2.1 Local polynomial estimators: basic properties

Let us consider as a motivation for local polynomial fitting the case of a deterministic design in $\mathbb{R}$. By the Taylor theorem any function $f(\cdot)$ in a Hölder class $\Sigma(\beta, L)$, $\beta>1$ can be represented, up to a reminder term, as $f(t) \approx f(x)+f^{\prime}(x)(t-x)+$ $\cdots+f^{(p-1)}(t-x)^{p-1} /(p-1)$ ! for $t$ sufficiently close to $x$ and $p-1=\lfloor\beta\rfloor$. This suggests the use of a local polynomial approximation to $f(t)$ in the form $f_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(t)=$ $\Psi(t-x)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}$ with $\Psi(u)=\left(1, u, \ldots,(u)^{p-1} /(p-1)!\right)^{\top}$ and the vector of parameters $\boldsymbol{\theta}=\boldsymbol{\theta}(x)=\left(\theta^{(0)}, \theta^{(1)}, \ldots, \theta^{(p-1)}\right)^{\top}$ with $\theta^{(j)}(x)=f^{(j)}(x)$ to be estimated. The main intrinsic issue is to detect an optimal "vicinity" of the point $x$ in order to avoid overor undersmoothing.

## Consider a regression model

$$
Y_{i}=f\left(X_{i}\right)+\sigma \varepsilon_{i}, \quad i=1, \ldots, n
$$

where $\varepsilon_{i}$ are independent zero mean random variables with $\mathbb{E} \varepsilon_{i}^{2}=1$. Given a point $x \in \mathbb{R}$, we aim to recover the value $f(x)$ from the noisy data. Let $\boldsymbol{Y}$ be an $n$ dimensional vector of observations such that $\boldsymbol{Y}=\left(Y_{1}, Y_{2}, \ldots, Y_{n}\right)^{\top}$. Denote for any $i=1, \ldots, n$ by $\Psi_{i}$ the vector of values of the polynomial basis functions at the design points centered at the reference point $x$ :

$$
\Psi_{i}=\Psi\left(X_{i}-x\right) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left(1, X_{i}-x, \ldots,\left(X_{i}-x\right)^{p-1} /(p-1)!\right)^{\top}
$$

and by $\boldsymbol{\Psi}$ the $p \times n$ matrix with columns $\Psi_{i}$. Let $W(u)$ be a nonnegative localizing function (smoothing kernel) having its maximum at zero and being finite or vanishing at infinity: $W(u) \rightarrow 0$ as $|u| \rightarrow \infty$. To shorten the notation denote also by $w_{h, i}(x) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}$ $W\left(\frac{X_{i}-x}{h}\right)$. The localizing scheme corresponding to a bandwidth $h>0$ then can be represented as a diagonal matrix of the form:

$$
\mathbf{W}_{h}(x) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \operatorname{diag}\left\{w_{h, 1}(x), \ldots, w_{h, n}(x)\right\}
$$

The following definition of local polynomial estimators is based on the ones from [72] page 35 and 31] pages 28-29.

Definition 1.2.1. A vector $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{h}(x) \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$ defined as a minimizer of the weighted sum of squares

$$
\begin{align*}
\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{h}(x) & =\underset{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \mathbb{R}^{p}}{\operatorname{argmin}}\left\|\mathbf{W}_{h}(x)^{1 / 2}\left(\boldsymbol{Y}-\boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}\right)\right\|^{2} \\
& =\underset{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \mathbb{R}^{p}}{\operatorname{argmin}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left|Y_{i}-\Psi_{i}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}\right|^{2} w_{h, i}(x) \tag{2.1}
\end{align*}
$$

is called a local polynomial estimator of order $p-1$ of $\boldsymbol{\theta}(x)$. The statistic

$$
\widetilde{f}_{h}(x)=\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{h}(x)=\Psi(0)^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{h}(x)
$$

is called a local polynomial estimator of order $p-1$ of $f(x)$. Here $\boldsymbol{e}_{1} \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$ is the first canonical basis vector.

We will refer to the local polynomial estimators of order $p-1$ of $\boldsymbol{\theta}(x)$ and of $f(x)$ as the $L P(p-1)$ estimator of $\boldsymbol{\theta}(x)$ or of $f(x)$ respectively. It is easy to see that for the properly normalized basis functions the $L P(p-1)$ estimator of $\boldsymbol{\theta}(x)$ provides estimators of all derivatives of the function $f$ of order less or equal $p-1$ :

$$
\widetilde{f}_{h}^{(j)}(x)=\boldsymbol{e}_{j+1}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{h}(x), \quad j=1, \ldots, p-1
$$

with the $j$ th canonical basis vector $\boldsymbol{e}_{j} \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$
The $L P(p-1)$ estimator $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{h}(x)$ satisfies the normal equations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{B}(x) \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{h}(x)=\boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{h}(x) \boldsymbol{Y} \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the symmetric $p \times p$ matrix $\mathbf{B}(x)$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{B}(x) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{h}(x) \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top}=\sum_{i=1}^{n} \Psi_{i} \Psi_{i}^{\top} w_{h, i}(x) . \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

If the matrix $\mathbf{B}(x)$ is positive definite $(\mathbf{B}(x) \succ 0)$, the $L P(p-1)$ estimator is the unique solution of (2.2) and is given by the following formula:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{h}(x)=\mathbf{B}(x)^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{h}(x) \boldsymbol{Y}=\mathbf{B}(x)^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \Psi_{i} Y_{i} w_{h, i}(x) \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

In this case the $L P(p-1)$ estimator $\widetilde{f}_{h}(x)$ is a linear estimator of $f(x)$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{f}_{h}(x)=\sum_{i=1}^{n} Y_{i} W_{i}^{*}(x) \tag{2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the weights $W_{i}^{*}(x)$ are given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
W_{i}^{*}(x)=\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \mathbf{B}(x)^{-1} \Psi_{i} w_{h, i}(x) \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Recall the important reproducing polynomials property of the local polynomial estimator (see [72] page 36), and for a more general representation [31] page 85 .

Proposition 1.2.2. Let $x \in \mathbb{R}$ be such that $\mathbf{B}(x) \succ 0$ and let $P_{p-1}$ be a polynomial of degree less or equal to $p-1$. Then the weights defined by (2.6) satisfy

$$
\sum_{i=1}^{n} P_{p-1}\left(X_{i}\right) W_{i}^{*}(x)=P_{p-1}(x)
$$

for any design points $\left\{X_{1}, \ldots, X_{n}\right\}$. Particularly,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \sum_{i=1}^{n} W_{i}^{*}(x)=1  \tag{2.7}\\
& \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(X_{i}-x\right)^{m} W_{i}^{*}(x)=0, \quad m=1, \ldots, p-1
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. By the Taylor expansion

$$
P_{p-1}\left(X_{i}\right)=\sum_{m=1}^{p} \frac{P_{p-1}^{(m-1)}(x)}{(m-1)!}\left(X_{i}-x\right)^{(m-1)}=\Psi_{i}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}
$$

with $0!\stackrel{\text { def }}{=} 1$ and $\boldsymbol{\theta}(x) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left(P_{p-1}(x), P_{p-1}^{\prime}(x), \ldots, P_{p-1}^{(p-1)}(x)\right)^{\top}$. Then by (2.6) and (2.3)

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{i=1}^{n} P_{p-1}\left(X_{i}\right) W_{i}^{*}(x)=\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \mathbf{B}(x)^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \Psi_{i} \Psi_{i}^{\top} w_{h, i}(x) \boldsymbol{\theta}(x) \\
& =\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}(x)=P_{p-1}(x)
\end{aligned}
$$

### 1.2.2 Mean squared error of local polynomial estimators

In this section we show a classical method for obtaining upper bounds for the quadratic risk of the $L R(p-1)$ estimator under the assumption that the underlying function $f$ belongs to a Hölder class $\Sigma(\beta, L)$ with $p-1=\lfloor\beta\rfloor$. This analysis will be done via the traditional bias-variance trade-off. Later on in Section 2.5 it will be shown how this approach can be adjusted for the purpose of pointwise adaptation. In what follows we assume a deterministic design with $X_{i} \in[0,1]$. Fix a point $x \in \mathbb{R}$ and the method of localization $\mathbf{W}_{h}(x)$. By (2.4) the local polynomial estimator $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{h}(x)$ can be easily decomposed into deterministic and stochastic parts:

$$
\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{h}(x)=\boldsymbol{\theta}_{h}^{*}(x)+\boldsymbol{\zeta}_{h}(x),
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
\boldsymbol{\theta}_{h}^{*}(x) & =\mathbf{B}(x)^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \Psi_{i} w_{h, i}(x) f\left(X_{i}\right), \\
\boldsymbol{\zeta}_{h}(x) & =\sigma \mathbf{B}(x)^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \Psi_{i} w_{h, i}(x) \varepsilon_{i} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{f}_{h}(x)=\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{h}(x)=\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}_{h}^{*}(x)+\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\zeta}_{h}(x) \tag{2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

with

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}_{h}^{*}(x)=\sum_{i=1}^{n} W_{i}^{*}(x) f\left(X_{i}\right), \\
& \boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\zeta}_{h}(x)=\sigma \sum_{i=1}^{n} W_{i}^{*}(x) \varepsilon_{i} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Denote the variance of the stochastic part $\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\zeta}_{h}(x)$ of (2.8) by

$$
\begin{align*}
\sigma_{h}^{2}(x) & \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \operatorname{Var}_{f}\left[\tilde{f}_{h}(x)\right] \\
& =\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \mathbb{E}\left[\boldsymbol{\zeta}_{h}(x) \boldsymbol{\zeta}_{h}(x)^{\top}\right] \boldsymbol{e}_{1} \\
& =\sigma^{2} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(W_{i}^{*}(x)\right)^{2} . \tag{2.9}
\end{align*}
$$

Define the bias (the approximation error)

$$
b_{h}(x) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \mathbb{E}_{f}\left[\widetilde{f}_{h}(x)-f(x)\right]=\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}_{h}^{*}(x)-f(x)
$$

Then the bias-variance decomposition for the mean squared error at $x$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{MSE}(x) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \mathbb{E}_{f}\left[\left|\widetilde{f}_{h}(x)-f(x)\right|^{2}\right]=b_{h}^{2}(x)+\sigma_{h}^{2}(x) \tag{2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using Proposition 1.2 .2 the bias can be written as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
b_{h}(x)=\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(f\left(X_{i}\right)-f(x)\right) W_{i}^{*}(x) \tag{2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Following the line of presentation from [72], we impose the following assumptions on the localizing schemes and the design.
( $\mathfrak{L p 1}$ ) There exists a number $\lambda_{0}>0$ such that uniformly in $x$ the smallest eigenvalue fulfills $\lambda_{p}(\mathbf{B}(x)) \geq n h \lambda_{0}$ for all sufficiently large $n$.
$(\mathfrak{L p z})$ There exists a real number $a_{0}>0$ such that for any interval $A \subseteq[0,1]$ and all $n \geq 1$

$$
\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \mathbb{I}\left\{X_{i} \in A\right\} \leq a_{0} \max \left\{\int_{A} \mathrm{~d} t, \frac{1}{n}\right\}
$$

$(\mathfrak{L p} 3) \quad$ The localizing functions (kernels) $w_{h, i}$ are compactly supported in $[0,1]$ with

$$
w_{h, i}(x)=0 \quad \text { if } \quad\left|X_{i}-x\right|>h
$$

This immediately implies a similar property for the local polynomial weights:

$$
W_{i}^{*}(x)=0 \quad \text { if } \quad\left|X_{i}-x\right|>h .
$$

$(\mathfrak{L p} 4)$ There exists a finite number $w_{\max }$ such that

$$
\sup _{i, x}\left|w_{h, i}(x)\right| \leq w_{\max }
$$

Lemma 1.2.3. Assume ( $\mathfrak{L p l})-(\mathfrak{L p} 4)$. Then for $n$ sufficiently large and all $h \geq \frac{1}{2 n}$ and $x \in[0,1]$ the local polynomial weights $W_{i}^{*}(x)$ are such that:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sup _{i, x}\left|W_{i}^{*}(x)\right| \leq \frac{C_{1}}{n h}, \\
& \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left|W_{i}^{*}(x)\right| \leq C_{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

with $C_{1}=w_{\max } \sqrt{e} / \lambda_{0}$ and $C_{2}=2 w_{\max } a_{0} \sqrt{e} / \lambda_{0}$.

Proof. Recall that $\mathbf{B}(x)$ is a symmetric non-degenerate $p \times p$ matrix. Then by the Schur theorem there exist an orthogonal matrix $U$ and a diagonal matrix $\Lambda=$ $\operatorname{diag}\left\{\lambda_{1}^{-2}(\mathbf{B}(x)), \ldots, \lambda_{p}^{-2}(\mathbf{B}(x))\right\}$ such that $\mathbf{B}(x)^{-2}=U^{\top} \Lambda U$. Then by Assumption ( $\mathfrak{L p ı}$ ) for any $\gamma \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$

$$
\gamma^{\top} \mathbf{B}(x)^{-2} \gamma=\gamma^{\top} U^{\top} \Lambda U \gamma \leq\left(n h \lambda_{0}\right)^{-2}\|\gamma\|^{2}
$$

implying

$$
\left\|\mathbf{B}(x)^{-1} \gamma\right\| \leq\left(n h \lambda_{0}\right)^{-1}\|\gamma\| .
$$

By (2.6), Assumptions ( $\mathfrak{L p} 3$ ) and ( $\mathfrak{L p 4 )}$ and using that $h<1$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|W_{i}^{*}(x)\right| & =\left|\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \mathbf{B}(x)^{-1} \Psi_{i} w_{h, i}(x)\right| \\
& \leq w_{\max }\left\|\mathbf{B}(x)^{-1} \Psi_{i}\right\| \leq \frac{w_{\max }}{\lambda_{0} n h}\left\|\Psi_{i}\right\| \\
& \leq \frac{w_{\max }}{\lambda_{0} n h}\left(1+h^{2}+\frac{h^{4}}{(2!)^{2}}+\cdots+\frac{h^{2(p-1)}}{((p-1)!)^{2}}\right)^{1 / 2} \\
& \leq \frac{w_{\max }}{\lambda_{0} n h}\left(1+1+\frac{1}{2!}+\cdots+\frac{1}{(p-1)!}\right)^{1 / 2} \\
& <\frac{w_{\max } \sqrt{e}}{\lambda_{0} n h}
\end{aligned}
$$

where the upper bound $w_{\max } \sqrt{e}\left(\lambda_{0} n h\right)^{-1}$ does not depend on $i$ and $n$.
The second assertion of the lemma is obtained similarly. Condition ( $\mathfrak{L p z )}$ implies

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left|W_{i}^{*}(x)\right| & \leq \frac{w_{\max }}{\lambda_{0} n h} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left\|\Psi_{i}\right\| \mathbb{I}\left\{X_{i} \in[x-h, x+h]\right\} \\
& \leq \frac{w_{\max } \sqrt{e}}{\lambda_{0}} a_{0} \max \left\{2, \frac{1}{n h}\right\} \\
& \leq \frac{2 w_{\max } \sqrt{e} a_{0}}{\lambda_{0}}
\end{aligned}
$$

for all $h \geq \frac{1}{2 n}$.
Theorem 1.2.4. Let $f \in \Sigma(\beta, L)$ on $[0,1]$ and let $\widetilde{f}_{h}(x)$ be the $L P(p-1)$ estimator of $f(x)$ with $p-1=\lfloor\beta\rfloor$. Then under the conditions of Lemma 1.2.3 for $n$ sufficiently large and all $h \geq \frac{1}{2 n}$ and $x \in[0,1]$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|b_{h}(x)\right| & \leq C_{2} \frac{L h^{\beta}}{(p-1)!} \\
\sigma_{h}^{2}(x) & \leq \frac{\sigma^{2} C_{1} C_{2}}{n h}
\end{aligned}
$$

with $C_{1}$ and $C_{2}$ as in Lemma 1.2.3.
Moreover, the choice of positive bandwidth $h=h^{\star}(n)$ given by (2.16) such that

$$
h^{\star}(n)=\mathcal{O}\left(n^{-\frac{1}{2 \beta+1}}\right)
$$

provides the following upper bound for the quadratic risk:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varlimsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sup _{f \in \Sigma(\beta, L)} \sup _{x \in[0,1]} \mathbb{E}_{f}\left[\psi_{n}^{-2}\left|\widetilde{f}_{h}(x)-f(x)\right|^{2}\right] \leq C, \tag{2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{n}=\mathcal{O}\left(n^{-\frac{\beta}{2 \beta+1}}\right) \tag{2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

is given by (2.17) and the constant $C$ is finite and depends on $\beta, L, \sigma^{2}, p, w_{\max }$ and $a_{0}$ only.

Corollary 1.2.5. Under the conditions of Theorem 1.2 .4 we have the same rate for the MISE (mean integrated square error):

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varlimsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sup _{f \in \Sigma(\beta, L)} \mathbb{E}_{f}\left[\psi_{n}^{-2} \int_{0}^{1}\left|\widetilde{f}_{h}(x)-f(x)\right|^{2} \mathrm{~d} x\right] \leq C \tag{2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

with the rate $\psi_{n}$ given by (2.13) and the finite constant $C$ depending on $\beta, L, \sigma^{2}$, $p, w_{\max }$ and $a_{0}$ only.

Proof. By (2.11) and the Taylor theorem with $\tau_{i}$ such that the points $\tau_{i} X_{i}$ are between $X_{i}$ and $x$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
b_{h}(x) & =\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(f\left(X_{i}\right)-f(x)\right) W_{i}^{*}(x) \\
& =\sum_{j=1}^{p-2} \frac{f^{(j)}(x)}{j!} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(X_{i}-x\right)^{j} W_{i}^{*}(x)+\sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{f^{(p-1)}\left(\tau_{i} X_{i}\right)}{(p-1)!}\left(X_{i}-x\right)^{p-1} W_{i}^{*}(x) .
\end{aligned}
$$

The first summand is equal to zero by Proposition 1.2.2. By the same argumentation the second term can be rewritten as follows:

$$
\begin{aligned}
b_{h}(x) & =\sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{f^{(p-1)}\left(\tau_{i} X_{i}\right)}{(p-1)!}\left(X_{i}-x\right)^{p-1} W_{i}^{*}(x) \\
& =\frac{1}{(p-1)!} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(f^{(p-1)}\left(\tau_{i} X_{i}\right)-f^{(p-1)}(x)\right)\left(X_{i}-x\right)^{p-1} W_{i}^{*}(x)
\end{aligned}
$$

Then by Lemma 1.2.3

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|b_{h}(x)\right| & \leq \frac{L}{(p-1)!} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left|\tau_{i} X_{i}-x\right|^{\beta-(p-1)}\left|X_{i}-x\right|^{p-1}\left|W_{i}^{*}(x)\right| \\
& \leq \frac{L}{(p-1)!} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left|X_{i}-x\right|^{\beta}\left|W_{i}^{*}(x)\right| \mathbb{I}\left\{\left|X_{i}-x\right| \leq h\right\} \\
& \leq C_{2} \frac{L h^{\beta}}{(p-1)!}
\end{aligned}
$$

By formula (2.9) and Lemma 1.2 .3 the variance is bounded by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sigma_{h}^{2}(x) & \leq \sigma^{2} \sup _{i, x}\left|W_{i}^{*}(x)\right| \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left|W_{i}^{*}(x)\right| \\
& \leq \frac{\sigma^{2} C_{1} C_{2}}{n h}
\end{aligned}
$$

Then by (2.10)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{MSE}(x) \leq \widetilde{C}_{2} h^{2 \beta}+\frac{\widetilde{C}_{1}}{n h} \tag{2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\widetilde{C}_{1}=\sigma^{2} C_{1} C_{2}$ and $\widetilde{C}_{2}=C_{2}^{2} L^{2}((p-1)!)^{-2}$. Then the optimal bandwidth $h^{\star}(n)$ minimizing the upper bound for the MSE at $x$ is given by

$$
\begin{align*}
h^{\star}(n) & =\left(\frac{\widetilde{C}_{1}}{2 \beta \widetilde{C}_{2}}\right)^{\frac{1}{2 \beta+1}} n^{-\frac{1}{2 \beta+1}} \\
& =\left(\frac{\sigma^{2}((p-1)!)^{2}}{4 a_{0} \beta L^{2}}\right)^{\frac{1}{2 \beta+1}} n^{-\frac{1}{2 \beta+1}} \tag{2.16}
\end{align*}
$$

This gives us the rate $\psi_{n}$ w.r.t. the squared loss function over a Hölder class $\Sigma(\beta, L)$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
\psi_{n} & =\widetilde{C}\left(\frac{L}{(p-1)!}\right)^{\frac{1}{2 \beta+1}}\left(\frac{\sigma^{2}}{n}\right)^{\frac{\beta}{2 \beta+1}} \\
& =\mathcal{O}\left(n^{-\frac{\beta}{2 \beta+1}}\right) \tag{2.17}
\end{align*}
$$

with $\widetilde{C}=2^{\frac{1}{2 \beta+1}} w_{\max } \sqrt{e} \lambda_{0}^{-1} a_{0}^{\frac{\beta+1}{2 \beta+1}} \beta^{-\frac{\beta}{2 \beta+1}}$.

### 1.2.3 Method of local approximation: general set-up

In this section, following up to the notation the book [31] and the papers [29], 30] we will explain the basic idea of the method of local approximation in a more general set-up than in the previous section. Consider for simplicity the regression model

$$
Y_{i}=f\left(X_{i}\right)+\varepsilon_{i}, \quad i=1, \ldots, n .
$$

If we want to recover $f(x)$ at the point $x$, we put the center of localization at $x$. Suppose that some basis $\left\{\psi_{j}(\cdot)\right\}$ is chosen. Denote by $\Psi(u)=\left(\psi_{1}(u), \ldots, \psi_{p}(u)\right)^{\top}$ a vector of the basis function. We believe that for $t$ close to $x$ the values $f(t)$ can be well approximated by the finite sum

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(t) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \Psi(t-x)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}(x)=\sum_{j=1}^{p} \theta^{(j)}(x) \psi_{j}(t-x) \tag{2.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\Psi(t-x)$ is the vector of values of the basis functions centered at $x$. Thus, to estimate $f(x)$, we have to estimate the vector of coefficients $\boldsymbol{\theta}(x)=\left(\theta^{(1)}(x), \ldots, \theta^{(p)}(x)\right)^{\top}$.

Let $W(u)$ be a nonnegative localizing function (smoothing kernel) having maximum at zero and being finite or vanishing at infinity: $W(u) \rightarrow 0$ as $\|u\| \rightarrow \infty$. Denote also $w_{h, i}(x) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} W\left(\frac{X_{i}-x}{h}\right)$. Let $F: \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_{\geq 0}$ be a convex loss function. Then the solution (solutions) of the following minimization problem

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{h}(x)=\underset{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \mathbb{R}^{p}}{\operatorname{argmin}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} F\left(Y_{i}-\Psi_{i}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}\right) w_{h, i}(x) \tag{2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\Psi_{i} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \Psi\left(X_{i}-x\right), i=1, \ldots, n$ is the estimator of the vector $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ at the point $x$ obtained by the method of local approximation. Notice that $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{h}(x)$ is an $M$-estimator, see [25] or [73]. The estimator

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{f}_{h}(x) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \Psi(0)^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{h}(x)=\sum_{j=1}^{p} \widetilde{\theta}_{h}^{(j)}(x) \psi_{j}(0) \tag{2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

is an estimator of the function $f$ at the point $x$ by the method of local approximation. In the case of the polynomial basis $\left\langle 1, u, u^{2}, \ldots\right\rangle$ we have $\Psi(0)=(1,0, \ldots, 0)^{\top}$ and $\widetilde{f}_{h}(x)$ is just the first coordinate of $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{h}(x)$.

It was stressed in [31] (see page 29) that the optimal choice of the parameter of locality (bandwidth $h$ ) is one of the most important issues of the nonparametric estimation. Katkovnik [31], see page 16, pointed out that the practical use of the estimators obtained by the method of local approximation, as well as of any estimators, requires to construct them adaptively, that is with a tuning of the parameters in accordance with the data in hand. This leads essentially to the traditional problem of testing the hypothesis about the model. The necessity of data-driven treatment motivates the application of the Lepski-type procedure to the selection of the scale (of the bandwidth $h_{\widehat{k}}$ ) and the "propagation conditions" approach on the choice of the critical values of the adaptive procedure (see Section 2.3) suggested in 33] and in [66] and developed in the present work.

The asymptotic properties of the estimators given by (2.19) and (2.20) were precisely studied in [69, 70] and 71]. In [71] it was shown that the estimators, constructed by (2.19) w.r.t. the convex loss function and the polynomial basis $\left\langle 1, \ldots, u^{p}\right\rangle$ exhibit the best rate of convergence among all estimators of functions over Hölder classes $\Sigma(p-1, L)$ on some bounded subset of $\mathbb{R}$, as well as among all estimators of their derivatives. The use of a non-quadratic loss function $F(\cdot)$ is very important in the theory of robust estimation and allows to treat the noise with unbounded variance, see for instance the classical paper of Huber [25].

If the basis $\left\{\psi_{j}(\cdot)\right\}$ is an orthonormal basis in $L_{2}(\mathcal{X})$ for some compact $\mathcal{X} \subset \mathbb{R}^{d}$ and the loss function is quadratic, i.e., if $F(y)=y^{2}$, then the estimator $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{h}(x)$
defined by (2.19) is the weighted least squares estimator. If the matrix $\mathbf{B}(x) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}$ $\sum_{i=1}^{n} \Psi_{i} \Psi_{i}^{\top} w_{h, i}(x)$ is positive definite then one can write:

$$
\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{h}(x)=\mathbf{B}(x)^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \Psi_{i} Y_{i} w_{h, i}(x)
$$

In this case $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{h}(x)$ and $\tilde{f}_{h}(x)$ are linear estimators. Taking the polynomial basis we come back to the $L P(p-1)$ estimator introduced in the previous section.

### 1.3 Information-based complexity and

## approximation in increasing dimension

Computational complexity is a measure of the intrinsic computational resources required to solve a mathematically formulated problem. It depends on the problem, but not on the particularly used algorithm. The notion "information" is used in the theory of complexity in the every-day sense of the word. The information is what we know about the problem to be solved. It should be stressed that this term used in Chapter 3 has nothing in common with Shannon's definition of information, nor with the Kullback-Leibler information criterion [36] used in Chapter 2. See [67] for an informal introduction, however containing a comprehensive overview of the literature.

One can distinguish two different types of complexity. In the first case the information is complete, exact, and free; an example is provided by the traveling salesman problem. This is the so-called combinatorial complexity. The information-based complexity that we are interested in here, is the computational complexity of (multivariate) continuous mathematical models. This branch of computational complexity deals with the intrinsic difficulty of the approximate solution of a problem for which
the information is partial, noisy, and priced, see [51]. This is the case when dealing with continuous problems on infinite dimensional spaces. Only partial information such as a finite number of functional values is available. In this case the problem can only be solved approximately implying the presence of error. Usually one requires the problem to be solved with an error not larger than a threshold $\varepsilon$. The information-based complexity is then defined as the minimal number $n(\varepsilon, d)$ of information operations (functional values, for example), needed to solve the $d$-variate problem with an error not exceeding $\varepsilon$. In different settings and for different error criteria, $\varepsilon$ may have different meanings, but always reflects the error tolerance.

As pointed out in [49], a central issue is the study of how the information complexity depends on $\varepsilon^{-1}$ and $d$. If $n(\varepsilon, d)$ depends exponentially on $\varepsilon^{-1}$ and $d$, the problem is called intractable. Many multivariate problems exhibit exponential dependence on $d$, called after Bellman [5] the curse of dimensionality. If the information complexity depends on $\varepsilon^{-1}$ and $d$ polynomially, the problem is polynomially tractable.

In spite of the existence of vast literature on the computational complexity of $d$-variate problems, most of the papers and books study error bounds without taking into account the dependence on $d$. Research on tractability, requiring the knowledge of dependence on both $\varepsilon^{-1}$ and $d$, was started in the early nineties by Woźniakowski [76], [77], [78], who introduced the notion of "tractability" and suggested to consider the dependence on $d$ as $d \rightarrow \infty$. This is important for numerous applications including physics, chemistry, finance, economics, and the computational sciences. For instance, in quantum mechanics, statistical mechanics and mathematical finance, for path integration the number of variables is infinite; approximations to path integrals
result in arbitrary large $d$, see 59] and [49] for details.
In average case settings the cost and the error are defined by their average performance. The general theory in the average case settings, among other approaches, was created by Traub, Wasilkowski, and Woźniakowski in [51]. The future development is presented by the monographs of Ritter [59] and Novak and Wozniakowski [49].

One of the problems which can be treated in this framework is the approximation (recovery) of functions. Let $T=[0,1]^{d}$ and $\mathcal{F}=C^{k}(T)$. We identify any $f \in \mathcal{F}$ with its embedding $i d(f)=f$ in the (weighted) $L_{p}$-space over $T$ with $1 \leq p \leq \infty$. Let the data be the functional values $f\left(t_{1}\right), \ldots, f\left(t_{n}\right)$. Based on the data $f\left(t_{i}\right)$ an approximate solution (function) $\tilde{f}$ is constructed. The average error of $\tilde{f}$ is defined by $\left(\mathbb{E}\|f-\widetilde{f}\|_{p}^{q}\right)^{1 / q}$ with some $1 \leq q<\infty$, where $\|\cdot\|_{p}$ denotes a (weighted) $L_{p}$-norm.

Usually, the computational costs are proportional to the total number of functional values, and therefore to the information complexity. One aims at finding a "good" method $\tilde{f}$ with average cost not exceeding a given bound and with minimal average error. Often one considers methods which use only the functional values $f\left(t_{i}\right)$. Then the key quantity in the average case settings is the $n$th minimal average error

$$
\inf _{t_{i} \in T} \inf _{a_{i} \in L_{p}(T)}\left(\mathbb{E}\left\|f-\sum_{i=1}^{n} a_{i} f\left(t_{i}\right)\right\|_{L_{p}(T)}^{q}\right)^{1 / q}
$$

This minimal error states how well $f$ can be approximated on average by (affine) linear methods using $n$ functional values. Chapter 3 is devoted to the approximation of $d$-parametric random fields of tensor product-type, which is a particular case of linear tensor product problems, see Chapter 6 of [49] for a general study.

## Chapter 2

## Adaptive estimation under noise misspecification in regression

We consider the problem of pointwise estimation in nonparametric regression with heteroscedastic additive Gaussian noise. We use the method of local approximation applying the Lepski method for selecting one estimator from a set of linear estimators obtained by different degrees of localization. This approach is combined with the "propagation conditions" on the choice of critical values of the procedure, as suggested recently by Spokoiny and Vial [66]. The "propagation conditions" are relaxed for the model with misspecified covariance structure. Specifically, the model with unknown mean and variance is approximated by the one with the parametric assumption of local linearity of the mean function and with an incorrectly specified covariance matrix. We show that this procedure allows a misspecification of the covariance matrix with a relative error up to $o\left(\frac{1}{\log n}\right)$, where $n$ is the sample size. The quality of estimation is measured in terms of nonasymptotic "oracle" risk bounds.

### 2.1 Model and set-up

Consider a regression model

$$
\begin{equation*}
\boldsymbol{Y}=\boldsymbol{f}+\Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \varepsilon, \quad \varepsilon \sim \mathcal{N}\left(0, I_{n}\right) \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

with response vector $\boldsymbol{Y} \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$ and the covariance matrix $\Sigma_{0}=\operatorname{diag}\left(\sigma_{0,1}^{2}, \ldots, \sigma_{0, n}^{2}\right)$. This model can be written as

$$
Y_{i}=f\left(X_{i}\right)+\sigma_{0, i} \varepsilon_{i}, \quad i=1, \ldots, n
$$

with design points $X_{i} \in \mathcal{X} \subset \mathbb{R}^{d}$. Given a point $x \in \mathcal{X}$, the target of estimation is the value of the regression function $f(x)$. We apply the method of local approximation described in Section 1.2.3. In view of the representation (1.1) this means that we believe that at a vicinity of some given point $x \in \mathbb{R}^{d}$ the unknown vector $\boldsymbol{f}$ can be well approximated by $\boldsymbol{f}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}=\boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}$, where $\boldsymbol{\Psi}$ is a given $p \times n$ matrix whose columns $\Psi_{i}$ consist of the values, at the design points, of basis functions centered at $x$, that is, $\Psi(u)=\left(\psi_{1}(u), \ldots, \psi_{p}(u)\right)^{\top}$ for some basis $\left\{\psi_{j}\right\}$ in $L_{2}(\mathcal{X})$ and $\Psi_{i} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \Psi\left(X_{i}-x\right)$. The parameter $\boldsymbol{\theta}=\left(\theta^{(0)}, \theta^{(1)}, \ldots, \theta^{(p-1)}\right)^{\top} \in \Theta \subset \mathbb{R}^{p}$ is the target of estimation, and we will choose the appropriate width of the localization window adaptively by application of Lepski's method. The covariance matrix $\Sigma_{0}$ is not assumed to be known exactly and the approximate model used instead of the true one reads as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\boldsymbol{Y}=\boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}+\Sigma^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\varepsilon} \tag{1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\Sigma=\operatorname{diag}\left(\sigma_{1}^{2}, \ldots, \sigma_{n}^{2}\right), \min \left\{\sigma_{i}^{2}\right\}>0$. Thus the model is misspecified in two places: in the form of the regression function and in the error distribution. Following the abbreviation from Katkovnik [32] we will refer to this model as to "local polynomial approximation" or, more generally, "local parametric approximation" (LPA),
since it is assumed that the "true" model (1.1) locally can be replaced by the "wrong" parametric one.

The model constraint on the form of the regression function includes the important class of polynomial regressions. For example in the univariate case $x \in \mathbb{R}$, due to the Taylor theorem, the approximation of the unknown function $f(t)$ for $t$ close to $x$ can be written in the following form: $f_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(t)=\theta^{(0)}+\theta^{(1)}(t-x)+\cdots+\theta^{(p-1)}(t-x)^{p-1} /(p-1)$ !, with the parameter $\boldsymbol{\theta}=\left(\theta^{(0)}, \theta^{(1)}, \ldots, \theta^{(p-1)}\right)^{\top}$ corresponding to the values of $f$ and its derivatives at the point $x$. The $p \times n$ matrix $\Psi$ then consists of the columns $\Psi_{i}=\left(1, X_{i}-x, \ldots,\left(X_{i}-x\right)^{p-1} /(p-1)!\right)^{\top}, i=1, \ldots, n$. If the regression function is sufficiently smooth then, for any $t$ close to $x$, up to a reminder term, $f(t) \approx f_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(t)$ and the estimator of $f(x)$ at the point $x$ is given by the first coordinate of $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}$, that is by $\widetilde{f}(x)=f_{\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}}(x)=\widetilde{\theta}^{(0)}$. See for further information on local polynomial regression Section 1.2, or for more deep insight [17], [32] or [45].

The general approach advocated in here includes also the important case of local constant approximation at a given point $x \in \mathbb{R}$. In this case the design matrix $\boldsymbol{\Psi}=(1, \ldots, 1)$ and $f_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\left(X_{i}\right)=\boldsymbol{\Psi}_{i}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}=\theta^{(0)}=f_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(x), \quad i=1, \ldots, n$.

### 2.2 Quasi-maximum local likelihood estimation

Fix a point $x \in \mathbb{R}^{d}$ and an orthogonal basis $\left\{\psi_{j}\right\}$ in $L_{2}(\mathcal{X})$. Let the localizing operator be identified by the corresponding matrix. Thus for every $x$ the sequence of localizing schemes (scales) $\mathcal{W}_{k}(x), k=1, \ldots, K$ is given by the matrices $\mathcal{W}_{k}(x)=$ $\operatorname{diag}\left(w_{k, 1}(x), \ldots, w_{k, n}(x)\right)$, where the weights $w_{k, i}(x) \in[0,1]$ can be understood, for instance, as smoothing kernels $w_{k, i}(x)=W\left(\left(X_{i}-x\right) h^{-1}\right)$. We assume that a
particular localizing function $w_{(\cdot)}$ is fixed, and we aim to choose the index $k$ of the optimal bandwidth $h_{k}$ based on the available data. To simplify the notation we sometimes suppress the dependence on the reference point $x$. Denote by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{W}_{k} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \Sigma^{-1 / 2} \mathcal{W}_{k} \Sigma^{-1 / 2}=\operatorname{diag}\left(\frac{w_{k, 1}}{\sigma_{1}^{2}}, \ldots, \frac{w_{k, n}}{\sigma_{n}^{2}}\right), \quad k=1, \ldots, K \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\Theta$ be a compact subset of $\mathbb{R}^{p}$. The LPA means that there exist non-zero weights $w_{k, i}$ and a parameter $\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta$ such that $f\left(X_{i}\right) \approx f_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\left(X_{i}\right)=\Psi_{i}^{\top} \theta$ for all $X_{i}$ providing $w_{k, i}>0$. The notation $f\left(X_{i}\right) \approx \Psi_{i}^{\top} \theta$ also has the meaning that the localized data distribution, obtained by restricting the measures $\mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}$ and $\mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma_{0}}$ to the $\sigma$-field generated by those data for which $w_{k, i}>0$, are close to each other in a certain sense, see modeling bias in Section 2.4.3.

Under the LPA the corresponding local quasi-log-likelihood has the following form:

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathrm{L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}\right) & =-\frac{1}{2}\left(\boldsymbol{Y}-\boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{W}_{k}\left(\boldsymbol{Y}-\boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}\right)+R \\
& =-\frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left|Y_{i}-\Psi_{i}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}\right|^{2} \frac{w_{k, i}}{\sigma_{i}^{2}}+R \tag{2.2}
\end{align*}
$$

where $R$ stands for the terms not depending on $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ and

$$
\Psi_{i}=\Psi\left(X_{i}-x\right)=\left(\psi_{1}\left(X_{i}-x\right), \ldots, \psi_{p}\left(X_{i}-x\right)\right)^{\top}
$$

Then, due to the assumption of the normality of the errors, for every $k$ the quasimaximum likelihood estimator (QMLE) $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}=\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x)=\left(\widetilde{\theta}_{k}^{(0)}(x), \widetilde{\theta}_{k}^{(1)}(x), \ldots, \widetilde{\theta}_{k}^{(p-1)}(x)\right)^{\top}$ coincides with the LSE and is defined as the minimizer of the weighted sum of squares
from (2.2):

$$
\begin{align*}
\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k} & \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \underset{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta}{\operatorname{argmax}} \mathrm{L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}\right) \\
& =\underset{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta}{\operatorname{argmin}}\left\|\mathbf{W}_{k}^{1 / 2}\left(\boldsymbol{Y}-\boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}\right)\right\|^{2} \\
& =\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k} \boldsymbol{Y}=\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \Psi_{i} Y_{i} \frac{w_{k, i}}{\sigma_{i}^{2}}, \tag{2.3}
\end{align*}
$$

where the $p \times p$ matrix $\mathbf{B}_{k}=\mathbf{B}_{k}(x)$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{B}_{k} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k} \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top}=\sum_{i=1}^{n} \Psi_{i} \Psi_{i}^{\top} \frac{w_{k, i}}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} . \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

That is, by Definition 1.2 .1 in the case of the polynomial basis the estimator $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x)$ is a $L P_{k}(p-1)$ estimator of $\boldsymbol{\theta}(x)$ corresponding to $k$ th scale. In the following we assume that $n>p$ and $\operatorname{det} \mathbf{B}_{k}>0$ for any $k=1, \ldots, K$. Because $p=\operatorname{rank}\left(\mathbf{B}_{k}\right) \leq$ $\min \left\{p, \operatorname{rank}\left(\mathcal{W}_{k}(x)\right)\right\}$ this requires the following conditions on the design matrix $\boldsymbol{\Psi}$ and the minimal localizing scheme $\mathcal{W}_{1}(x)$ :
$(\mathfrak{D}) \quad$ The $p \times n$ design matrix $\boldsymbol{\Psi}$ has full row rank, i.e.,

$$
\operatorname{dim} \mathcal{C}\left(\boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top}\right)=\operatorname{dim} \mathcal{C}\left(\boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Psi}\right)=p
$$

$(\mathfrak{L o c}) \quad$ The smallest localizing scheme $\mathcal{W}_{1}(x)$ is chosen to contain at least $p$ design points such that $w_{1, i}(x)>0$, i.e., $p \leq \#\left\{i: w_{1, i}(x)>0\right\}$.

The condition ( $\mathfrak{L o c}$ ) is automatically fulfilled in practise since, for example, in $\mathbb{R}^{1}$ it means that for local constant fitting we need at least one observation and so on. Usually it is intrinsically assumed that, starting from the smallest window, at every step of the procedure every new window contains at least $p$ new design points.

The formulas (2.3) give a sequence of estimators $\left\{\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x)\right\}_{k=1}^{K}$. It was noticed in [2] that in the case of unknown true data distribution the MLE is a natural estimator
for the parameter maximizing the expected log-likelihood. That is, for every $k=$ $1, \ldots, K$, the estimator $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x)$ can be considered as an estimator of

$$
\begin{align*}
\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}(x) & \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \underset{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta}{\operatorname{argmax}} \mathbb{E} L\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}\right)  \tag{2.5}\\
& =\underset{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta}{\operatorname{argmin}}\left(\boldsymbol{f}-\mathbf{\Psi}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{W}_{k}\left(\boldsymbol{f}-\boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}\right) \\
& =\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \mathbf{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k} \boldsymbol{f}=\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \Psi_{i} f\left(X_{i}\right) \frac{w_{k, i}}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} . \tag{2.6}
\end{align*}
$$

Recall that we do not assume that the regression function $f$ even locally satisfies the LPA. It is known from [75] that in the presence of model misspecification for every $k$ the QMLE $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}$ is a strongly consistent estimator for $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}(x)$, which is the minimizer of the localized Kullback-Leibler [37] information criterion:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}(x) & =\underset{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta}{\operatorname{argmin}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \mathbb{K} \mathbb{L}\left(\mathcal{N}\left(f\left(X_{i}\right), \sigma_{i}\right), \mathcal{N}\left(\Psi_{i}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}, \sigma_{i}\right)\right) w_{k, i}(x) \\
& =\underset{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta}{\operatorname{argmin}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left|f\left(X_{i}\right)-\Psi_{i}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}\right|^{2} \frac{w_{k, i}(x)}{\sigma_{i}^{2}}
\end{aligned}
$$

with $\mathbb{K} \mathbb{L}\left(P, P_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \mathbb{E}_{P}\left[\log \left(\frac{\mathrm{~d} P}{\mathrm{~d} P_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}}\right)\right]$. For the properties of the Kullback-Leibler divergence see, for example, [72].

It follows from the above definition of $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}(x)$ and from (2.3) that the QMLE $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}$ admits a decomposition into deterministic and stochastic parts:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}=\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k}\left(\boldsymbol{f}+\Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\varepsilon}\right)=\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}+\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\varepsilon}  \tag{2.7}\\
& \mathbb{E} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}=\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*} \tag{2.8}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\varepsilon \sim \mathcal{N}\left(0, I_{n}\right)$. Notice that if the regression function indeed follows the LPA, that is if $\boldsymbol{f} \equiv \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}$, then $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*} \equiv \boldsymbol{\theta}$ for any $k$ and the classical parametric set-up is recovered.

### 2.3 Adaptive procedure

Let a point $x \in \mathcal{X} \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}$, an orthogonal basis $\left\{\psi_{j}\right\}$ in $L_{2}(\mathcal{X})$ and the method of localization $w_{(\cdot)}$ be fixed. The crucial assumption for the procedure under consideration to work is that the localizing schemes (scales) $\mathcal{W}_{k}(x)=\operatorname{diag}\left(w_{k, 1}, \ldots, w_{k, n}\right)$ are nested. Specifically, we say that the localizing schemes are nested if the following ordering condition is fulfilled:
$(\mathcal{W})$ For any fixed $x$ and the method of localization $w_{(\cdot)}$ the following relation holds:

$$
\mathcal{W}_{1}(x) \leq \ldots \leq \mathcal{W}_{k}(x) \leq \ldots \leq \mathcal{W}_{K}(x)
$$

For kernel smoothing this condition means the following. Let the sequence of bandwidths $\left\{h_{k}\right\}$ be ordered by increasing magnitude, i.e., $h_{1}<\ldots<h_{K}$, and let $\mathcal{W}_{k}(x)=\operatorname{diag}\left(w_{k, 1}, \ldots, w_{k, n}\right)$ be the localizing matrix, corresponding to the bandwidth $h_{k}$. Here the weights $w_{k, i}=w_{k, i}(x)=W\left(\left(X_{i}-x\right) h_{k}^{-1}\right) \in[0,1]$ are nonnegative functions such that for any $0<h_{l}<h_{k}<1$ it holds $W\left(u h_{l}^{-1}\right) \leq W\left(u h_{k}^{-1}\right)$ and $W(u) \rightarrow 0$ as $|u| \rightarrow \infty$, or even are compactly supported.

Recall that given a center of localization $x \in \mathcal{X}$, a basis $\left\{\psi_{j}\right\}$ and the method of localization $w_{(\cdot)}$, we look for the estimator of $f(x)$ having the form

$$
\widetilde{f}_{k}(x)=\sum_{j=1}^{p} \widetilde{\theta}_{k}^{(j)}(x) \psi_{j}(0)
$$

The parameters $\widetilde{\theta}_{k}^{(j)}(x), j=1, \ldots, p$ are the components of the QMLE given by (2.3). The use of the adaptively chosen $\widehat{k}$ gives the adaptive estimator $\widetilde{f}_{\widehat{k}}(x)$ of $f(x)$ corresponding to the adaptive window choice $w_{\widehat{k},( }(x)$. In the case of the polynomial basis $\psi_{1}(0)=1$ and $\psi_{j}(0)=0$ for $j=2, \ldots, p$. Then the estimator of $f(x)$ is
just the first coordinate $\widetilde{\theta}_{\widehat{k}}^{(1)}(x)$. In this case we also can get the estimators for the derivatives of $f$ at the point $x$.

The index $\widehat{k} \in\{1, \ldots, K\}$ corresponds to the adaptive choice of the degree of localization (of the width of the window), and it will be obtained by application of Lepski's method, see below. Then the adaptive estimator of the parameter vector is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(x) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\widehat{k}}(x)=\left(\widetilde{\theta}_{\widehat{k}}^{(1)}(x), \ldots, \widetilde{\theta}_{\widehat{k}}^{(p)}(x)\right)^{\top} \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

In a non-formal way the idea of the adaptive procedure used for selection of $\widehat{k}$ can be described as follows. Let a point $x$ and the method of localization $W$ be fixed. For $k=1, \ldots, K$, let $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}=\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x)=\left(\widetilde{\theta}_{k}^{(0)}(x), \widetilde{\theta}_{k}^{(1)}(x), \ldots, \widetilde{\theta}_{k}^{(p-1)}(x)\right)^{\top}$ be the linear estimator defined by (2.3). We aim to choose an adaptive estimator $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(x)=\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\widehat{k}}(x)$ from the set $\left\{\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{1}, \ldots, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{K}\right\}$, that is to pick the adaptive index $\widehat{k}$ from $\{1, \ldots, K\}$. Following the Lepski method (see [38]), we will proceed with the multiple testing of homogeneity: starting with the smallest scheme $\mathcal{W}_{1}(x)$ and enlarging it step by step so long as the estimators $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}(x)$ do not differ from each other significantly. More precisely, to describe the test statistic, define for any $\boldsymbol{\theta}, \boldsymbol{\theta}^{\prime} \in \Theta$ the corresponding log-likelihood ratio:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}, \boldsymbol{\theta}^{\prime}\right) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \mathrm{L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}\right)-\mathrm{L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}^{\prime}\right) . \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, using the approach suggested in [33], for every $l=1, \ldots, K$, the fitted loglikelihood (FLL) ratio is defined as follows:

$$
\mathrm{L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}, \boldsymbol{\theta}^{\prime}\right) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \max _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta} \mathrm{L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{l}, \boldsymbol{\theta}, \boldsymbol{\theta}^{\prime}\right) .
$$

By Theorem 2.4.1, for any $l$ and $\boldsymbol{\theta}$, the FLL is a quadratic form:

$$
2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}, \boldsymbol{\theta}\right)=\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}-\boldsymbol{\theta}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{l}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}-\boldsymbol{\theta}\right) .
$$

Define the confidence set corresponding to $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}$ as

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathcal{E}_{l}\left(\mathfrak{z}_{l}\right) & \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left\{\boldsymbol{\theta}: 2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}, \boldsymbol{\theta}\right) \leq \mathfrak{z}_{l}\right\} \\
& =\left\{\boldsymbol{\theta}:\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}-\boldsymbol{\theta}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{l}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}-\boldsymbol{\theta}\right) \leq \mathfrak{z}_{l}\right\} . \tag{3.3}
\end{align*}
$$

In terms of this definition "the estimator $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}$ does not differ significantly from $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}$ " means that $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k} \in \mathcal{E}_{l}\left(\mathfrak{z}_{l}\right)$. This prompts to use (see [33]) the FLL-statistics:

$$
\begin{align*}
T_{l k} & \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} 2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right) \\
& =\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{l}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right), \quad l<k . \tag{3.4}
\end{align*}
$$

If $T_{l k}$ is significantly large, say $T_{l k}>\mathfrak{z}_{l}$ for some sufficiently big value $\mathfrak{z}_{l}$, then the discrepancy between $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}$ and $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}$ is not negligible and the corresponding hypothesis of homogeneity should be rejected in favor of the smaller one. Notice that this simple approach works only due to the condition $(\mathcal{W})$, because the hypotheses are nested.

A justification of the FLL approach is given by the fact that the fitted loglikelihood ratio $\mathrm{L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right)$ can be used to measure the quality of estimation of $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}$ by its empirical counterpart $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}$ at each level of localization (see [2] and [75]).

### 2.3.1 Algorithm

Given the set of linear estimators $\left\{\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{1}, \ldots, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{K}\right\}$ and the set of critical values $\left\{\mathfrak{z}_{1}, \ldots, \mathfrak{z}_{K-1}\right\}$, see the "propagation conditions" from the next subsection for details, one aims to select in a data-driven way the estimator $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}=\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\widehat{k}}$ with $\widehat{k} \in\{1, \ldots, K\}$. The selection procedure originating from [38] is described as follows:

$$
\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{1}
$$

$\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}$ is accepted iff $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k-1}$ was accepted and

$$
\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k} \in \bigcap_{l<k} \mathcal{E}_{l}\left(\mathfrak{z}_{l}\right) \Longleftrightarrow \bigcap_{l<k}\left\{T_{l k} \leq \mathfrak{z}_{l}\right\} \neq \emptyset .
$$

That is, we use Lepski's selection rule with the FLL test statistics $\left\{T_{l m}\right\}$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{k}=\max \left\{k \leq K: T_{l m} \leq \mathfrak{z}_{l}, l<m \leq k\right\} \tag{3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 2.3.2 Choice of the critical values

Let $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}$ denote the last accepted estimator after the first $k$ steps of the procedure:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\min \{k, \widehat{k}\}} . \tag{3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Denote for some $\kappa \leq K$ the hypothesis $H_{\kappa}: \boldsymbol{\theta}_{1}^{*}=\cdots=\boldsymbol{\theta}_{\kappa}^{*}=\boldsymbol{\theta}$, which means that the LPA is fulfilled up to the step $\kappa$. Clearly, by Assumption ( $\mathcal{W}$ ) for any $k<\kappa$ the hypothesis $H_{k}$ is included in $H_{\kappa}$.

Following the idea proposed in [66] we will choose the critical values $\mathfrak{z}_{1}, \ldots, \mathfrak{z}_{K-1}$ of the procedure using a kind of "level" conditions under the LPA (homogeneity hypothesis). In other words, the procedure is optimized to provide the desired error level in the local parametric situation. As it will be shown later (see Theorem 2.4.9), if the procedure is tuned well under the LPA, it will perform well even when this assumption is violated.

The Wilks-type Theorem 2.4.2 below gives the bound for the expected fitted loglikelihood ratio:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{E}\left|2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right)\right|^{r} \leq(1+\delta)^{r} C(p, r) \tag{3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the constant $C(p, r)$ does not depend on the degree of localization and is given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
C(p, r)=\mathbb{E}\left|\chi_{p}^{2}\right|^{r}=2^{r} \frac{\Gamma\left(r+\frac{p}{2}\right)}{\Gamma\left(\frac{p}{2}\right)} \tag{3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Take some "confidence level" $\alpha \in(0,1]$. Then the set of $K-1$ conditions on the choice of the critical values $\mathfrak{z}_{1}, \ldots, \mathfrak{z}_{K-1}$ can be defined to provide at each step of the procedure a risk of the adaptive estimators of at most an $\alpha$-fraction of the best possible (parametric) risk (3.7). These conditions are given by the following formulas:

Definition 2.3.1. (Propagation conditions (PC))
The critical values $\mathfrak{z}_{1}, \ldots, \mathfrak{z}_{K-1}$ satisfy the following set of conditions:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{E}_{0, \Sigma}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)\right|^{r} \leq \alpha C(p, r) \quad \text { for all } k=2, \ldots, K, \tag{3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $C(p, r)$ is defined by (3.8), $\alpha \in(0,1]$ and $\mathbb{E}_{0, \Sigma}$ stands for the expectation w.r.t. the measure $\mathcal{N}(0, \Sigma)$.

Remark 2.3.1. Lemma 2.6.1 (see Section (2.6) shows that under the LPA the Gaussian distribution provides a nice pivotality property: the actual value of the parameter $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ is not important for the risk of adaptive estimator, so one can put $\boldsymbol{\theta}=0$ in (3.9).

Remark 2.3.2. Since the procedure is fitted in the parametric situation, ideally (while the LPA holds) it should not terminate. If it does, then the critical values are too small. This event will be referred to as a "false alarm". Therefore by the $(P C)$ we require that at each level of localization the risk associated with the type I error is at most an $\alpha$-fraction of the corresponding risk in the parametric situation.

### 2.4 Theoretical study

### 2.4.1 Local parametric risk bounds

To justify the statistical properties of the considered procedure we need the following simple observation. Let for any $\boldsymbol{\theta}, \boldsymbol{\theta}^{\prime} \in \Theta$ the corresponding log-likelihood ratio $\mathrm{L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}, \boldsymbol{\theta}^{\prime}\right)$ be defined by (3.2). Then

$$
2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}, \boldsymbol{\theta}^{\prime}\right)=\left(\boldsymbol{Y}-\boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}^{\prime}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{W}_{k}\left(\boldsymbol{Y}-\boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}^{\prime}\right)-\left(\boldsymbol{Y}-\boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{W}_{k}\left(\boldsymbol{Y}-\boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}\right) .
$$

Theorem 2.4.1. (Quadratic shape of the fitted log-likelihood)
Let for every $k=1, \ldots, K$ the fitted log likelihood (FLL) be defined as follows:

$$
\mathrm{L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}^{\prime}\right) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \max _{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \mathrm{L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}, \boldsymbol{\theta}^{\prime}\right) .
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}\right)=\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\boldsymbol{\theta}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\boldsymbol{\theta}\right) . \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Notice that $\mathrm{L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}\right)$ defined by (2.2) is quadratic in $\boldsymbol{\theta}$. The assertion follows from the Taylor expansion of the second order at the point $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}$ because it is the point of maximum and the second derivative is a constant matrix $\mathbf{B}_{k}$.

In order to control the admissible level of misspecification for the "model" covariance matrix from (1.2) we need to introduce the following condition on the relative variability in errors:
(S) There exists $\delta \in[0,1)$ such that

$$
1-\delta \leq \sigma_{0, i}^{2} / \sigma_{i}^{2} \leq 1+\delta \quad \text { for all } i=1, \ldots, n
$$

Let the matrix $\mathbf{S}$ be defined as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{S} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{W}_{k} \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then for the distribution of $\mathrm{L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right)$ one observes the so-called "Wilks phenomenon" (see [19] ) described by the following theorem:

Theorem 2.4.2. Let the regression model be given by (1.1) and the parameter maximizing the expected local log-likelihood $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}=\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}(x)$ be defined by (2.5). Then for any $k=1, \ldots, K$ the following equality in distribution takes place:

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right) \stackrel{\mathrm{d}}{=} \lambda_{1}(\mathbf{S}) \bar{\varepsilon}_{1}^{2}+\cdots+\lambda_{p}(\mathbf{S}) \bar{\varepsilon}_{p}^{2}, \tag{4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $p=\operatorname{rank}\left(\mathbf{B}_{k}\right)=\operatorname{dim} \Theta=p, \lambda_{1}(\mathbf{S}), \ldots, \lambda_{p}(\mathbf{S})$ are the non-zero eigenvalues of the matrix $\mathbf{S}$ and $\bar{\varepsilon}_{i}$ are independent standard normal random variables.

Moreover, under Assumption (S) it holds that the maximal eigenvalue fulfills $\lambda_{\max }(\mathbf{S}) \leq 1+\delta$ and for any $\mathfrak{z}>0$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{P}\left\{2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right) \geq \mathfrak{z}\right\} \leq \mathbb{P}\{\eta \geq \mathfrak{z} /(1+\delta)\} \tag{4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\eta$ is a random variable distributed according to the $\chi^{2}$ law with $p$ degrees of freedom.

Remark 2.4.1. Generally, if the matrix $\mathbf{B}_{k}$ is degenerated in (4.3) the number of terms $p \leq \operatorname{dim} \Theta$.

Proof. By Theorem 2.4.1 and the decomposition (2.7) it holds that:

$$
\begin{aligned}
2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right) & =\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right) \\
& =\left(\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\varepsilon}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}\left(\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\varepsilon}\right) \\
& =\boldsymbol{\varepsilon}^{\top} \mathbf{S} \boldsymbol{\varepsilon},
\end{aligned}
$$

where the symmetric matrix $\mathbf{S}$ is defined by (4.2). Then by the Schur theorem there exist an orthogonal matrix $\mathbf{M}$ and a diagonal matrix $\boldsymbol{\Lambda}$ composed of the eigenvalues of $\mathbf{S}$ such that $\mathbf{S}=\mathbf{M}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Lambda} \mathbf{M}$. For $\boldsymbol{\varepsilon} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(0, I_{n}\right)$ and an orthogonal matrix $\mathbf{M}$ it holds that $\bar{\varepsilon} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \mathbf{M} \boldsymbol{\varepsilon} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(0, I_{n}\right)$. Indeed, $\mathbb{E} \mathbf{M} \boldsymbol{\varepsilon}=\mathbb{E} \boldsymbol{\varepsilon}=0$ and

$$
\operatorname{Var} \mathbf{M} \varepsilon=\mathbb{E} \mathbf{M} \varepsilon(\mathbf{M} \varepsilon)^{\top}=\operatorname{ME}\left(\varepsilon \varepsilon^{\top}\right) \mathbf{M} \varepsilon=\mathbf{M M}^{\top}=I_{n}
$$

Therefore

$$
2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right) \stackrel{\mathrm{d}}{=} \overline{\boldsymbol{\varepsilon}}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Lambda} \overline{\boldsymbol{\varepsilon}}, \quad \overline{\boldsymbol{\varepsilon}} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(0, I_{n}\right) .
$$

On the other hand, the matrix $\mathbf{S}=\Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{W}_{k} \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2}$ can be rewritten as:

$$
\mathbf{S}=\Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{W}_{k}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Pi}_{k} \mathbf{W}_{k}^{1 / 2} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2}
$$

with $\boldsymbol{\Pi}_{k}=\mathbf{W}_{k}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k}^{1 / 2}$. Notice that $\boldsymbol{\Pi}_{k}$ is an orthogonal projector onto the linear subspace of dimension $p=\operatorname{rank}\left(\mathbf{B}_{k}\right)$ spanned by the rows of matrix $\boldsymbol{\Psi}$. Indeed, $\boldsymbol{\Pi}_{k}$ is symmetric and idempotent, i.e., $\boldsymbol{\Pi}_{k}^{2}=\boldsymbol{\Pi}_{k}$.

Moreover, $\operatorname{rank}\left(\boldsymbol{\Pi}_{k}\right)=\operatorname{tr}\left(\boldsymbol{\Pi}_{k}\right)=\operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k}^{1 / 2}\right)=\operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k} \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top}\right)=$ $\operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \mathbf{B}_{k}\right)=\operatorname{tr}\left(I_{p}\right)=p$. Therefore $\boldsymbol{\Pi}_{k}$ has only $p$ unit eigenvalues and $n-p$ zero eigenvalues. Notice also that the $n \times n$ matrix $\mathbf{S}$ has $\operatorname{rank}(\mathbf{S})=\operatorname{rank}\left(\boldsymbol{\Pi}_{k} \mathbf{W}_{k}^{1 / 2} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2}\right)=$ $\operatorname{rank}\left(\boldsymbol{\Pi}_{k}\right)=p$ as well. Thus $2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right) \stackrel{\mathrm{d}}{=} \lambda_{1}(\mathbf{S}) \bar{\varepsilon}_{1}^{2}+\cdots+\lambda_{p}(\mathbf{S}) \bar{\varepsilon}_{p}^{2}$, where $\lambda_{1}(\mathbf{S}), \ldots, \lambda_{p}(\mathbf{S})$ are the non-zero eigenvalues of the matrix $\mathbf{S}$.

Define the $L_{2}$-norm of a matrix $\boldsymbol{A}$ via its maximal eigenvalue

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|A\| \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \sqrt{\lambda_{\max }\left(A^{\top} A\right)} \tag{4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, taking into account Assumption (S), the induced $L_{2}$-norm of the matrix $\mathbf{S}$
can be estimated as follows:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|\mathbf{S}\| & =\left\|\Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{W}_{k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{\Pi}_{k} \mathbf{W}_{k}^{1 / 2} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2}\right\| \\
& \leq\left\|\Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{W}_{k}^{1 / 2}\right\|\left\|\boldsymbol{\Pi}_{k}\right\|\left\|\mathbf{W}_{k}^{1 / 2} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2}\right\| \\
& =\lambda_{\max }\left(\mathbf{W}_{k} \Sigma_{0}\right) \lambda_{\max }\left(\boldsymbol{\Pi}_{k}\right) \\
& =\max _{i}\left\{w_{k, i} \frac{\sigma_{0, i}^{2}}{\sigma_{i}^{2}}\right\} \\
& \leq(1+\delta) \max _{i}\left\{w_{k, i}\right\} \leq 1+\delta
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore the largest eigenvalue of the matrix $\mathbf{S}$ is bounded: $\lambda_{\max }(\mathbf{S}) \leq 1+\delta$.
The last assertion of the theorem follows from the simple observation that

$$
\mathbb{P}\left\{\lambda_{1}(\mathbf{S}) \bar{\varepsilon}_{1}^{2}+\cdots+\lambda_{p}(\mathbf{S}) \bar{\varepsilon}_{p}^{2} \geq \mathfrak{z}\right\} \leq \mathbb{P}\left\{\lambda_{\max }(\mathbf{S})\left(\bar{\varepsilon}_{1}^{2}+\cdots+\bar{\varepsilon}_{p}^{2}\right) \geq \mathfrak{z}\right\}
$$

Corollary 2.4.3. (Quasi-parametric risk bounds)
Let the model be given by (1.1) and $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}=\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}(x)$ be defined by (2.5). Assume (S). Then for any $\mu<1 /(1+\delta)$

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathbb{E} \exp \left\{\mu \mathrm{L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right)\right\} & \leq[1-\mu(1+\delta)]^{-p / 2}  \tag{4.6}\\
\mathbb{E}\left|2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right)\right|^{r} & \leq(1+\delta)^{r} C(p, r) \tag{4.7}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
C(p, r)=\mathbb{E}\left|\chi_{p}^{2}\right|^{r}=2^{r} \frac{\Gamma\left(r+\frac{p}{2}\right)}{\Gamma\left(\frac{p}{2}\right)} . \tag{4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. By (4.3) and independence of $\bar{\varepsilon}_{i}$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{E} \exp \left\{\mu \mathrm{L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right)\right\} & =\mathbb{E} \exp \left\{\frac{\mu}{2} \sum_{i=1}^{p} \lambda_{i}(\mathbf{S}) \bar{\varepsilon}_{i}^{2}\right\} \\
& =\prod_{i=1}^{p} \mathbb{E} \exp \left\{\frac{\mu}{2} \lambda_{i}(\mathbf{S}) \bar{\varepsilon}_{i}^{2}\right\} \\
& =\prod_{i=1}^{p}\left[1-\mu \lambda_{i}(\mathbf{S})\right]^{-1 / 2} \\
& \leq\left[1-\mu \lambda_{\max }(\mathbf{S})\right]^{-p / 2} \\
& \leq[1-\mu(1+\delta)]^{-p / 2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $\eta \sim \chi_{p}^{2}$. Integrating by parts yields the second inequality:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{E}\left|2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right)\right|^{r} & =\int_{0}^{\infty} \mathbb{P}\left\{2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right) \geq \mathfrak{z}\right\} r \mathfrak{z}^{r-1} \mathrm{~d} \mathfrak{z} \\
& \leq r \int_{0}^{\infty} \mathbb{P}\{\eta \geq \mathfrak{z} /(1+\delta)\} \mathfrak{z}^{r-1} \mathrm{~d} \mathfrak{z} \\
& =(1+\delta)^{r} \mathbb{E}|\eta|^{r} .
\end{aligned}
$$

### 2.4.2 Upper bound for the critical values

Let us recall the (partial) Löwner ordering of matrices: for any real symmetric matrices $A$ and $B$ we will write $A \preceq B$ if and only if $\vartheta^{\top} A \vartheta \leq \vartheta^{\top} B \vartheta$ for all vectors $\vartheta$, or, equivalently if and only if the matrix $B-A$ is nonnegative definite.

Assuming ( $\mathfrak{S}$ ) the true covariance matrix fulfills $\Sigma_{0} \preceq \Sigma(1+\delta)$ and the variance
of the estimator $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}$ is bounded above by $\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1}$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
V_{k} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \operatorname{Var} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k} & =\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k} \Sigma_{0} \mathbf{W}_{k} \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1}  \tag{4.9}\\
& \preceq(1+\delta) \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k} \Sigma \mathbf{W}_{k} \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \\
& =(1+\delta) \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \Sigma^{-1 / 2} \mathcal{W}_{k}^{2} \Sigma^{-1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \\
& \preceq(1+\delta) \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \Sigma^{-1 / 2} \mathcal{W}_{k} \Sigma^{-1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \\
& =(1+\delta) \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k} \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \\
& =(1+\delta) \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} . \tag{4.10}
\end{align*}
$$

The last inequality follows from the observation that all the entries of the "weight" matrix $\mathcal{W}_{k}$ do not exceed one, implying $\mathcal{W}_{k}^{2} \preceq \mathcal{W}_{k}$. Strict equality occurs if the $\left\{w_{k, i}\right\}$ are boxcar (rectangular) kernels and the noise is known, i.e., $\delta=0$. To justify the procedure one needs to show that the critical values chosen by the $(P C)$ are finite. The upper bound for the critical values is obtained under the following assumption:
$(\mathfrak{B}) \quad$ Let the matrices $\mathbf{B}_{k}$ satisfy

$$
u_{0} I_{p} \preceq \mathbf{B}_{k-1}^{-1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{k} \mathbf{B}_{k-1}^{-1 / 2} \preceq u I_{p}
$$

for some constants $u_{0}$ and $u$ such that $1<u_{0} \leq u$ for any $2 \leq k \leq K$
Remark 2.4.2. In the "one dimensional case" $p=1$, that is for local constant approximation, the "matrix" $\mathbf{B}_{k}=\sum_{i=1}^{n} w_{k, i} \sigma_{i}^{-2} \geq \mathbf{B}_{k-1}$ is just a weighted"local design size". Assume for simplicity that $\sigma_{i}^{2} \equiv \sigma^{2}$, the weights are rectangular kernels $w_{k, i}(x)=\mathbb{I}\left\{\left|X_{i}-x\right| \leq h_{k} / 2\right\}$, and the design is equidistant. Then for $n$ sufficiently large

$$
\frac{1}{n} \mathbf{B}_{k}=\frac{1}{n \sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \mathbb{I}\left\{\left|\frac{i}{n}-x\right| \leq h_{k} / 2\right\} \approx \frac{h_{k}}{\sigma^{2}},
$$

and the condition $(\mathfrak{B})$ means that the bandwidths grow geometrically: $h_{k}=u h_{k-1}$. Denote for any $l<k$ the variance of the difference $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}$ by $V_{l k}$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
V_{l k} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \operatorname{Var}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}\right) \succ 0 . \tag{4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then there exists a unique matrix $V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \succ 0$ such that $\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right)^{2}=V_{l k}$.

Lemma 2.4.4. Assume ( $\mathfrak{S}$ ), (W) and $(\mathfrak{B})$. If for some $k \leq K$ the $L P A$ is fulfilled, that is if $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{1}^{*}=\cdots=\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}=\boldsymbol{\theta}$, then for any $l<k$ it holds that:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{P}\left\{2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right) \geq \mathfrak{z}\right\} & \leq \mathbb{P}\left\{\eta \geq \mathfrak{z} / \lambda_{\max }\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{l} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right)\right\} \\
& \leq \mathbb{P}\left\{\eta \geq \mathfrak{z} / t_{0}\right\} \\
\mathbb{P}\left\{2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}\right) \geq \mathfrak{z}\right\} & \leq \mathbb{P}\left\{\eta \geq \mathfrak{z} / \lambda_{\max }\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{k} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right)\right\} \\
& \leq \mathbb{P}\left\{\eta \geq \mathfrak{z} / t_{1}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $t_{0}=2(1+\delta)\left(1+u_{0}^{-(k-l)}\right), t_{1}=2(1+\delta)\left(1+u^{(k-l)}\right)$ and $\eta$ is a $\chi_{p}^{2}$-distributed random variable.

Proof. The LPA and (2.7) imply

$$
\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}=\mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{l} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\varepsilon}-\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\varepsilon} \stackrel{\mathrm{~d}}{=} V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \xi
$$

where $\xi$ is a standard normal vector in $\mathbb{R}^{p}$. Thus by Theorem 2.4.1] under the LPA for any $l<k$

$$
2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)=\left\|\mathbf{B}_{l}^{1 / 2}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)\right\|^{2} \stackrel{\mathrm{~d}}{=} \xi^{\top} V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{l} V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \xi
$$

By the Schur theorem there exists an orthogonal matrix $M$ such that

$$
\xi^{\top} V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{l} V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \xi \stackrel{\mathrm{~d}}{=} \bar{\varepsilon}^{\top} M^{\top} \Lambda_{l k} M \bar{\varepsilon}
$$

where $\bar{\varepsilon}$ is standard normal vector, $\left.\Lambda=\operatorname{diag}\left(\lambda_{1}\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{l} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right)\right), \cdots, \lambda_{p}\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{l} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right)\right)$ and $p=\operatorname{rank}\left(\mathbf{B}_{l}\right)$. Therefore

$$
2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right) \stackrel{\mathrm{d}}{=} \lambda_{1}\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{l} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right) \bar{\varepsilon}_{1}^{2}+\cdots+\lambda_{p}\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{l} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right) \bar{\varepsilon}_{p}^{2},
$$

where $\lambda_{j}\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{l} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right), j=1, \ldots, p$ are nonzero eigenvalues of $V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{l} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}$.
By a similar argument:

$$
2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}\right) \stackrel{\mathrm{d}}{=} \lambda_{1}\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{k} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right) \bar{\varepsilon}_{1}^{2}+\cdots+\lambda_{p}\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{k} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right) \bar{\varepsilon}_{p}^{2}
$$

Recalling that $\eta$ is a $\chi_{p}^{2}$-distributed random variable, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbb{P}\left\{2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right) \geq \mathfrak{z}\right\} \leq \mathbb{P}\left\{\eta \geq \mathfrak{z} / \lambda_{\max }\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{l} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right)\right\} \\
& \mathbb{P}\left\{2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}\right) \geq \mathfrak{z}\right\} \leq \mathbb{P}\left\{\eta \geq \mathfrak{z} / \lambda_{\max }\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{k} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right)\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

Notice that for any square matrices $A$ and $B$,

$$
(A-B)\left(A^{\top}-B^{\top}\right) \preceq 2\left(A A^{\top}+B B^{\top}\right)
$$

Application of this bound to the variance of the difference of estimators yields

$$
\begin{aligned}
V_{l k} & =\left(\mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{l} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2}-\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2}\right)\left(\mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{l} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2}-\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2}\right)^{\top} \\
& \preceq 2\left(\mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{l} \Sigma_{0} \mathbf{W}_{l} \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1}+\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{k} \Sigma_{0} \mathbf{W}_{k} \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1}\right) \\
& =2 V_{l}+2 V_{k}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $V_{l}=\operatorname{Var} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}, l \leq k$. By the upper bound (4.10) for the variance $V_{l}$ (resp. of $V_{k}$ ) and by Assumption ( $\mathfrak{B}$ ):

$$
\begin{aligned}
V_{l} & \preceq(1+\delta) \mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1} \\
V_{k} & \preceq(1+\delta) \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \preceq(1+\delta) u_{0}^{-(k-l)} \mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1} \\
V_{l k} & \preceq 2(1+\delta)\left(1+u_{0}^{-(k-l)}\right) \mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1}
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{B}_{l} \preceq 2(1+\delta)\left(1+u_{0}^{-(k-l)}\right) V_{l k}^{-1} \tag{4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus by (4.12) the upper bound for the induced $L_{2}$ matrix norm reads as follows:

$$
\begin{align*}
\lambda_{\max }\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{l} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right) & =\left\|\mathbf{B}_{l}^{1 / 2} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right\|^{2} \\
& =\sup _{\|\gamma\|=1} \gamma^{\top} V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{l} V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \gamma \\
& \leq 2(1+\delta)\left(1+u_{0}^{-(k-l)}\right) \sup _{\|\gamma\|=1} \gamma^{\top} V_{l k}^{1 / 2} V_{l k}^{-1} V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \gamma \\
& \leq 2(1+\delta)\left(1+u_{0}^{-(k-l)}\right) \tag{4.13}
\end{align*}
$$

Similarly:

$$
\begin{align*}
V_{l k} & \preceq 2(1+\delta)\left(1+u^{(k-l)}\right) \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \\
\lambda_{\max }\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{k} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right) & \leq 2(1+\delta)\left(1+u^{(k-l)}\right) \tag{4.14}
\end{align*}
$$

These bounds imply

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{P}\left\{2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right) \geq \mathfrak{z}\right\} & \leq \mathbb{P}\left\{\eta \geq \mathfrak{z} / \lambda_{\max }\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{l} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right)\right\} \\
& \leq \mathbb{P}\left\{\eta \geq \mathfrak{z}\left[2(1+\delta)\left(1+u_{0}^{-(k-l)}\right)\right]^{-1}\right\} \\
\mathbb{P}\left\{2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}\right) \geq \mathfrak{z}\right\} & \leq \mathbb{P}\left\{\eta \geq \mathfrak{z} / \lambda_{\max }\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{k} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right)\right\} \\
& \leq \mathbb{P}\left\{\eta \geq \mathfrak{z}\left[2(1+\delta)\left(1+u^{(k-l)}\right)\right]^{-1}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

Lemma 2.4.5. Under the conditions of the preceding lemma for any $\mu_{0}<t_{0}^{-1}$, or $\mu_{1}<t_{1}^{-1}$ respectively, the exponential moments are bounded:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{E} \exp \left\{\mu_{0} \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)\right\} & \leq\left[1-\mu_{0} t_{0}\right]^{-p / 2} \\
\mathbb{E} \exp \left\{\mu_{1} \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}\right)\right\} & \leq\left[1-\mu_{1} t_{1}\right]^{-p / 2}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $t_{0}=2(1+\delta)\left(1+u_{0}^{-(k-l)}\right)$ and $t_{1}=2(1+\delta)\left(1+u^{(k-l)}\right)$.

Proof. The proof of lemma is similar to the proof of Corollary 2.4.3, The bounds (4.13) and (4.14) imply the following bounds for the corresponding moment generating functions:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{E} \exp \left\{\mu \mathrm{L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)\right\} & =\prod_{j=1}^{p} \mathbb{E} \exp \left\{\frac{\mu}{2} \lambda_{j}\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{l} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right) \bar{\varepsilon}_{j}^{2}\right\} \\
& =\prod_{j=1}^{p}\left[1-\mu \lambda_{j}\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{l} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right)\right]^{-1 / 2} \\
& \leq\left[1-\mu \lambda_{\max }\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{l} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right)\right]^{-p / 2} \\
& \leq\left[1-2 \mu(1+\delta)\left(1+u_{0}^{-(k-l)}\right)\right]^{-p / 2} \\
\mathbb{E} \exp \left\{\mu \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}\right)\right\} & \leq\left[1-\mu \lambda_{\max }\left(V_{l k}^{1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{k} V_{l k}^{1 / 2}\right)\right]^{-p / 2} \\
& \leq\left[1-2 \mu(1+\delta)\left(1+u^{(k-l)}\right)\right]^{-p / 2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Lemma 2.4.6. Under the conditions of the preceding lemma it holds that:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbb{E}\left|2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)\right|^{r} \leq 2^{r} C(p, r)(1+\delta)^{r}\left(1+u_{0}^{-(k-l)}\right)^{r}, \\
& \mathbb{E}\left|2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}\right)\right|^{r} \leq 2^{r} C(p, r)(1+\delta)^{r}\left(1+u^{(k-l)}\right)^{r}
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
C(p, r)=\mathbb{E}\left|\chi_{p}^{2}\right|^{r}=2^{r} \frac{\Gamma\left(r+\frac{p}{2}\right)}{\Gamma\left(\frac{p}{2}\right)}
$$

Proof. Integration by parts and Lemma 2.4.4 yield for the second assertion

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{E}\left|2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}\right)\right|^{r} & =r \int_{0}^{\infty} \mathbb{P}\left\{2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}\right) \geq \mathfrak{z}\right\} \mathfrak{z}^{r-1} \mathrm{~d} \mathfrak{z} \\
& \leq r \int_{0}^{\infty} \mathbb{P}\left\{\eta \geq \mathfrak{z}\left[2(1+\delta)\left(1+u^{(k-l)}\right)\right]^{-1}\right\} \mathfrak{z}^{r-1} \mathrm{~d} \mathfrak{z} \\
& =2^{r}(1+\delta)^{r}\left(1+u^{(k-l)}\right)^{r} \mathbb{E}|\eta|^{r}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\eta \sim \chi_{p}^{2}$. The first assertion is proved similarly.

Theorem 2.4.7. (The theoretical choice of the critical values)
Assume $(\mathfrak{D}),(\mathfrak{L o c}),(\mathfrak{B})$ and $(\mathcal{W})$. The adaptive procedure (3.5) in the considered set-up is well-defined in the sense that the choice of the critical values

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{z}_{k}=\frac{4}{\mu}\left\{r(K-k) \log u+\log (K / \alpha)-\frac{p}{4} \log (1-4 \mu)-\log \left(1-u^{-r}\right)+\bar{C}(p, r)\right\} \tag{4.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

provides the conditions (3.9) for all $k \leq K$. Here $\bar{C}(p, r)=\log \left\{\frac{2^{2 r}[\Gamma(2 r+p / 2) \Gamma(p / 2)]^{1 / 2}}{\Gamma(r+p / 2)}\right\}$ and $\mu \in(0,1 / 4)$. In particular,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{E}_{0, \Sigma}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{K}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{K}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{K}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right|^{r} \leq \alpha C(p, r) \tag{4.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. The risk corresponding to the adaptive estimator can be represented as a sum of risks of the false alarms at each step of the procedure:

$$
\mathbb{E}_{0, \Sigma}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)\right|^{r}=\sum_{m=1}^{k-1} \mathbb{E}_{0, \Sigma}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m}\right)\right|^{r} \mathbb{I}\left\{\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}=\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m}\right\}
$$

By the definition of the last accepted estimator $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}$ the event $\left\{\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}=\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m}\right\}$ with $m=1, \ldots, k-1$ occurs if for some $l=1, \ldots, m$ the statistic $T_{l, m+1}>\mathfrak{z}_{l}$. Thus

$$
\left\{\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}=\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m}\right\} \subseteq \bigcup_{l=1}^{m}\left\{T_{l, m+1}>\mathfrak{z}_{l}\right\}
$$

It holds also that for any positive $\mu$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{I}\left\{T_{l, m+1}>\mathfrak{z}_{l}\right\} & =\mathbb{I}\left\{2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1}\right)-\mathfrak{z}_{l}>0\right\} \\
& \leq \exp \left\{\frac{\mu}{2} \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1}\right)-\frac{\mu}{4} \mathfrak{z}_{l}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

Application of this simple fact and the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality implies for $m=$
$1, \ldots, k-1$ the following bound:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbb{E}_{0, \Sigma}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m}\right)\right|^{r} \mathbb{I}\left\{\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}=\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m}\right\} \\
= & \mathbb{E}_{0, \Sigma}\left|2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m}\right)\right|^{r} \mathbb{I}\left\{\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}=\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m}\right\} \\
\leq & \sum_{l=1}^{m} e^{-\frac{\mu}{4} 3 l} \mathbb{E}_{0, \Sigma}\left[\left|2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m}\right)\right|^{r} \exp \left\{\frac{\mu}{2} \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1}\right)\right\}\right] \\
\leq & \sum_{l=1}^{m} e^{-\frac{\mu}{4} z_{l}}\left\{\mathbb{E}_{0, \Sigma}\left[\left|2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m}\right)\right|^{2 r}\right]\right\}^{1 / 2}\left\{\mathbb{E}_{0, \Sigma}\left[\exp \left\{\mu \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1}\right)\right\}\right]\right\}^{1 / 2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

By Lemma 2.4.5 with $\delta=0$

$$
\mathbb{E}_{0, \Sigma}\left[\exp \left\{\mu \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1}\right)\right\}\right]<(1-4 \mu)^{-p / 2}
$$

This together with the bound from Lemma 2.4.6 gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbb{E}_{0, \Sigma}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)\right|^{r} \\
\leq & 2^{r} \sqrt{C(p, 2 r)}(1-4 \mu)^{-p / 4} \sum_{m=1}^{k-1} \sum_{l=1}^{m} e^{-\frac{\mu}{4} \mathfrak{z} l}\left(1+u^{(k-m)}\right)^{r} \\
= & 2^{r} \sqrt{C(p, 2 r)}(1-4 \mu)^{-p / 4} \sum_{l=1}^{k-1} e^{-\frac{\mu}{4} \mathfrak{z} l} \sum_{m=l}^{k-1}\left(1+u^{(k-m)}\right)^{r} \\
\leq & 2^{2 r} \sqrt{C(p, 2 r)}(1-4 \mu)^{-p / 4}\left(1-u^{-r}\right)^{-1} \sum_{l=1}^{k-1} e^{-\frac{\mu}{4} \mathfrak{z} l} u^{r(k-l)},
\end{aligned}
$$

because $-(k-l)<-(m-l)$ and

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{m=l}^{k-1}\left(1+u^{(k-m)}\right)^{r} & =u^{r(k-l)} \sum_{m=l}^{k-1}\left(u^{-(k-l)}+u^{-(m-l)}\right)^{r} \\
& <2^{r} u^{r(k-l)} \sum_{m=l}^{k-1} u^{-r(m-l)} \\
& <2^{r} u^{r(k-l)}\left(1-u^{-r}\right)^{-1}
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $u^{r(k-l)} \leq u^{r(K-l)}$ for any $l<k \leq K$ the choice

$$
\mathfrak{z}_{l}=\frac{4}{\mu}\left\{r(K-l) \log u+\log (K / \alpha)-\frac{p}{4} \log (1-4 \mu)-\log \left(1-u^{-r}\right)+\bar{C}(p, r)\right\}
$$

with

$$
\bar{C}(p, r)=\log \left\{\frac{2^{2 r}[\Gamma(2 r+p / 2) \Gamma(p / 2)]^{1 / 2}}{\Gamma(r+p / 2)}\right\}
$$

provides the required bound

$$
\mathbb{E}_{0, \Sigma}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{l}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}\right)\right|^{r} \leq \alpha C(p, r) \text { for all } l=2, \ldots, K
$$

### 2.4.3 Quality of estimation in the nearly parametric case: small modeling bias and propagation property

The critical values $\mathfrak{z}_{1}, \ldots, \mathfrak{z}_{K-1}$ were selected by the propagation conditions (3.9) under the hypothesis of homogeneity of the theta's with a probably misspecified error distribution, i.e. under the measure $\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma)$. Now $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{1}^{*} \approx \cdots \approx \boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*} \approx \boldsymbol{\theta}$ up to some $k \leq K$ and the covariance matrix is $\Sigma_{0}$. The aim is to formalize the meaning of " $\approx$ " and to justify the use of the critical values in this situation. For this purposes we will take into account the discrepancy between the joint distributions of the linear estimators $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{1}, \ldots, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}$ for $k=1, \ldots, K$ under the null (homogeneity) hypothesis corresponding to the distributions with mean $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{1}^{*}=\cdots=\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}=\boldsymbol{\theta}$ and "wrong" covariance matrix $\Sigma$ and in the general situation (under the alternative) with $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{1}^{*} \neq \cdots \neq \boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}$ and covariance matrix $\Sigma_{0}$. Denote the expectations w.r.t. these measures by $\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}:=\mathbb{E}_{k, \boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}$ and $\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}:=\mathbb{E}_{k, \boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}$ respectively. Denote a $p \times k$ matrix of the first $k$ estimators by

$$
\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{k} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{1}, \ldots, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right) .
$$

Its mean under the alternative (the matrix of the parameters minimizing the expected local log-likelihoods) is given by

$$
\boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}^{*} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{k}=\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{1}^{*}, \ldots, \boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right)
$$

and the mean under the null (the "true" parameter in the parametric set-up) is:

$$
\boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{k}=(\boldsymbol{\theta}, \ldots, \boldsymbol{\theta})
$$

Let $A \otimes B$ stands for the Kronecker product of $A$ and $B$ defined as

$$
A \otimes B=\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
a_{11} B & a_{12} B & \cdots & a_{1 n} B \\
a_{21} B & a_{22} B & \cdots & a_{2 n} B \\
\cdot & \cdot & \cdots & \cdot \\
a_{m 1} B & a_{m 2} B & \cdots & a_{m n} B
\end{array}\right)
$$

Denote the $p k \times p k$ covariance matrices of $\operatorname{vec} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{k}^{\top}=\left(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{1}^{\top}, \ldots, \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}^{\top}\right) \in \mathbb{R}^{p k}$ by

$$
\begin{gather*}
\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \operatorname{Var}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left[\operatorname{vec} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{k}\right]=\mathbf{D}_{k}\left(J_{k} \otimes \Sigma\right) \mathbf{D}_{k}^{\top}  \tag{4.17}\\
\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \operatorname{Var}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}\left[\operatorname{vec} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{k}\right]=\mathbf{D}_{k}\left(J_{k} \otimes \Sigma_{0}\right) \mathbf{D}_{k}^{\top} \tag{4.18}
\end{gather*}
$$

where the matrix $J_{k}$ is a $k \times k$ matrix with all its elements equal to 1 and the $p k \times n k$ matrix $\mathbf{D}_{k}$ is defined as follows:

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathbf{D}_{k} & \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} D_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus D_{k}=\operatorname{diag}\left(D_{1}, \ldots, D_{k}\right) \\
D_{l} & \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1} \Psi \mathbf{W}_{l}, \quad l=1, \ldots, k \tag{4.19}
\end{align*}
$$

By Lemma 2.6.2 from Section [2.6 under Assumption (S) with the same $\delta$, a relation similar to ( $\mathfrak{S}$ ) holds for the covariance matrices $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}$ and $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}$ of the linear estimators:

$$
\begin{equation*}
(1-\delta) \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k} \preceq \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0} \preceq(1+\delta) \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}, \quad k \leq K . \tag{4.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Even though the moment generating function of vec $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{K}$ has a form corresponding to the multivariate normal distribution (see Lemma 2.6 .4 in Section 2.6) this representation makes sense only if $\Sigma_{K}$ is nonsingular. Notice that $\operatorname{rank}\left(J_{K} \otimes \Sigma\right)=n$. From $J_{K} \otimes \Sigma \succeq 0$ it follows only that $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{K} \succeq 0$, similarly, $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{K, 0} \succeq 0$. However, without any additional assumptions it is easy to show (see Lemma 2.6.3 in Section 2.6) that for rectangular kernels $\Sigma_{K} \succ 0$. On the other hand, due to (4.20), it is enough to require nonsingularity only for the matrix $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{K}$ corresponding to the approximate model (1.2), and its choice belongs to a statistician. In what follows we assume that $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{K} \succ 0$.

Denote by $\mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}^{k}=\mathcal{N}\left(\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}\right)$ and by $\mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}^{k}=\mathcal{N}\left(\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}^{*}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}\right), \quad k=$ $1, \ldots, K$, the distributions of $\operatorname{vec} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{k}$ under the null and under the alternative. Denote also the Radon-Nikodym derivative by

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z_{k} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \frac{\mathrm{d} \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}^{k}}{\mathrm{~d} \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}^{k}} \tag{4.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then by Lemma 2.6.5from Section 2.6 the Kullback-Leibler divergence between these measures has the following form:

$$
\begin{align*}
& 2 \mathbb{K} \mathbb{L}\left(\mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}^{k}, \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}^{k}\right) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} 2 \mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}} \log \left(\frac{\mathrm{~d} \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}^{k}}{\mathrm{~d} \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}^{k}}\right) \\
= & \Delta(k)+\log \left(\frac{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}}{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}}\right)+\operatorname{tr}\left(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}\right)-p k \tag{4.22}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
b(k) & \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}^{*}-\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k},  \tag{4.23}\\
\Delta(k) & \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} b(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{-1} b(k) . \tag{4.24}
\end{align*}
$$

If there would be no "noise misspecification", i.e., if $\delta \equiv 0$ implying $\Sigma=\Sigma_{0}$, then $\Delta(k)=b(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{-1} b(k)=2 \mathbb{K} \mathbb{L}\left(\mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma}^{k}, \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}^{k}\right)$. Therefore this quantity can be used to
indicate the deviation between the mean values in the true (1.1) and the approximate (1.2) models. Clearly, under $(\mathcal{W})$ the quantity $\Delta(k)$ grows with $k$, so following the terminology suggested in [66], we introduce the small modeling bias condition:
(SMB) Let there exist for some $k \leq K$ and some $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ a constant $\Delta \geq 0$ such that

$$
\Delta(k) \leq \Delta
$$

Monotonicity of $\Delta(k)$ and Assumption ( $S M B$ ) immediately imply that

$$
\Delta\left(k^{\prime}\right) \leq \Delta \text { for all } k^{\prime} \leq k
$$

The conditions (4.20) yield $-p k \delta \leq \operatorname{tr}\left(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}\right)-p k \leq p k \delta$. Thus (6.7) implies the bound for the Kullback-Leibler divergence in terms of $\delta$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\frac{p k}{2} \log (1+\delta)+\frac{\Delta(k)}{2}-\frac{p k \delta}{2} \leq \mathbb{K} \mathbb{L}\left(\mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}^{k}, \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}^{k}\right) \leq-\frac{p k}{2} \log (1-\delta)+\frac{\Delta(k)}{2}+\frac{p k \delta}{2} \tag{4.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, as $\delta \rightarrow 0+$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta(k)-2 p k \delta+o(\delta) \leq 2 \mathbb{K} \mathbb{L}\left(\mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}^{k}, \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}^{k}\right) \leq \Delta(k)+2 p k \delta+o(\delta) \tag{4.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

This means that if for some $k$ Assumption $(S M B)$ is fulfilled and $\delta=o\left(\frac{1}{K}\right)$, then the Kullback-Leibler divergence between $\mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}^{k}$ and $\mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}^{k}$ is bounded by a small constant.

Now one can state the crucial property for obtaining the final oracle result.

Theorem 2.4.8. (Propagation property)
Assume $(\mathfrak{D}),(\mathfrak{L o c}),(\mathfrak{S}),(\mathcal{W}),(\mathfrak{B})$ and $(P C)$. Then for any $k \leq K$ the
following upper bounds hold:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbb{E}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\boldsymbol{\theta}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\boldsymbol{\theta}\right)\right|^{r / 2} \\
& \leq\left(\mathbb{E}\left|\chi_{p}^{2}\right|^{r}\right)^{1 / 2}(1+\delta)^{p k / 4}(1-\delta)^{-3 p k / 4} \exp \left\{\varphi(\delta) \frac{\Delta(k)}{2(1-\delta)}\right\}, \\
& \mathbb{E}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)\right|^{r / 2} \\
& \leq\left(\alpha \mathbb{E}\left|\chi_{p}^{2}\right|^{r}\right)^{1 / 2}(1+\delta)^{p k / 4}(1-\delta)^{-3 p k / 4} \exp \left\{\varphi(\delta) \frac{\Delta(k)}{2(1-\delta)}\right\}, \\
& \text { where } \varphi(\delta) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \begin{cases}1 & \text { for homogeneous errors, } \\
\frac{2(1+\delta)}{(1-\delta)^{2}}-1 & \text { otherwise. }\end{cases}
\end{aligned}
$$

Here $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}=\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x)$ is the QMLE defined by (2.3) and $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x)=\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\min \{k, \widehat{k}\}}(x)$ is the adaptive estimator at the $k$ th step of the procedure.

Remark 2.4.3. Bounds (4.30) and (4.29) below give a kind of condition on the relative error in the noise misspecification. As $\delta \rightarrow 0+$ it holds for every $k \leq K$

$$
\varphi(\delta) \frac{\Delta(k)}{1+\delta}-2 p k \delta+o(\delta) \leq \log \mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left[Z_{k}^{2}\right] \leq \varphi(\delta) \frac{\Delta(k)}{1-\delta}+2 p k \delta+o(\delta)
$$

where $Z_{k}$ is defined by (4.21).
This bound implies, up to the additive constant $\log \left(\alpha \mathbb{E}\left|\chi_{p}^{2}\right|^{r}\right) / 2$, the same asymptotic behavior for the logarithm of the risk of adaptive estimator at each step of the procedure. Because by $(S M B)$ the quantity $\Delta(k)$ is bounded by a small constant and $K$ is of order $\log n, \mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left[Z_{k}^{2}\right]$ is small if $\delta=o\left(\frac{1}{\log n}\right)$. This means that for the case when $\Sigma$ is an estimator for $\Sigma_{0}$, only logarithmic in sample size accuracy is needed. This observation is of particular importance, since it is known from [64] that the rate $n^{-1 / 2}$ of variance estimation is achievable only for dimensions $d \leq 8$ over classes of functions with bounded second derivative.

Remark 2.4.4. The propagation property guaranties that the adaptive procedure does not stop with high probability while $\Delta(k)$ is small, i.e. under $(S M B)$, and if the relative error $\delta$ in the noise is sufficiently small.

Proof. Notice that for any nonnegative measurable function $g=g\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{k}\right)$ the CauchySchwarz inequality implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}[g]=\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left[g Z_{k}\right] \leq\left(\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left[g^{2}\right]\right)^{1 / 2}\left(\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left[Z_{k}^{2}\right]\right)^{1 / 2} \tag{4.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

with the Radon-Nikodym derivative

$$
Z_{k}=\frac{\mathrm{d} \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}^{k}}{\mathrm{~d} \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}^{k}}
$$

Taking $g=\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\boldsymbol{\theta}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\boldsymbol{\theta}\right)\right|^{r / 2}$ one gets the first assertion applying "the parametric risk bound" with $\delta=0$ from (4.7):

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{E}[g] & \leq\left(\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\boldsymbol{\theta}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\boldsymbol{\theta}\right)\right|^{r}\right)^{1 / 2}\left(\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left[Z_{k}^{2}\right]\right)^{1 / 2} \\
& =\left(\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left|2 \mathrm{~L}\left(\mathbf{W}_{k}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}, \boldsymbol{\theta}\right)\right|^{r}\right)^{1 / 2}\left(\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left[Z_{k}^{2}\right]\right)^{1 / 2} \\
& \leq\left(\mathbb{E}\left|\chi_{p}^{2}\right|^{r}\right)^{1 / 2}\left(\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left[Z_{k}^{2}\right]\right)^{1 / 2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

The second assertion is treated similarly by applying the pivotality property (Lemma 2.6.1) and the propagation conditions (3.9).

To calculate $\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left[Z_{k}^{2}\right]$ let us consider $\log Z_{k}$ given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\log \left(Z_{k}(y)\right)=\frac{1}{2} \log \left(\frac{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}}{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}}\right) & -\frac{1}{2}\left\|\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1 / 2}\left(y-\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}^{*}\right)\right\|^{2} \\
& +\frac{1}{2}\left\|\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{-1 / 2}\left(y-\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}\right)\right\|^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

as a function of $\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}^{*}$. Application of the Taylor expansion at the point $\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}$
yields

$$
\begin{aligned}
2 \log Z_{k} & =\log \frac{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}}{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}}-\left\|\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1 / 2}\left(y-\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}\right)\right\|^{2}+\left\|\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{-1 / 2}\left(y-\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}\right)\right\|^{2} \\
& +2 b(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1}\left(y-\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}\right)-b(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1} b(k)
\end{aligned}
$$

With $\xi \sim \mathcal{N}\left(0, I_{p k}\right)$ the second moment of the Radon-Nikodym derivative under the null hypothesis reads as follows:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left[Z_{k}^{2}\right] \\
= & \frac{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}}{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}} \exp \left\{-b(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1} b(k)\right\} \mathbb{E} \exp \left\{-\left\|\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2} \xi\right\|^{2}+\|\xi\|^{2}+2 b(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2} \xi\right\} \\
= & \frac{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}}{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}}\left[\operatorname{det}\left(2 \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2}-I_{p k}\right)\right]^{-1 / 2} \\
\times & \exp \left\{2 b(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2}\left(2 \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2}-I_{p k}\right)^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1} b(k)-b(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1} b(k)\right\} \\
= & \frac{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}}{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}}\left[\prod_{j=1}^{p k}\left\{2 \lambda_{j}\left(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2}\right)-1\right\}\right]^{-1 / 2}  \tag{4.28}\\
\times & \exp \left\{b(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1 / 2}\left[2 \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2}\left(2 \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2}-I_{p k}\right)^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1 / 2}-I_{p k}\right] \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1 / 2} b(k)\right\} .
\end{align*}
$$

To estimate the obtained expression in terms of the level of noise misspecification $\delta$ notice that the condition (4.20) implies

$$
\begin{gathered}
\left(\frac{1}{1+\delta}\right)^{p k} \leq \frac{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}}{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}} \leq\left(\frac{1}{1-\delta}\right)^{p k}, \\
\left(\frac{1-\delta}{1+\delta}\right)^{\frac{p k}{2}} \leq\left[\prod_{j=1}^{p k}\left\{2 \lambda_{j}\left(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2}\right)-1\right\}\right]^{-1 / 2} \leq\left(\frac{1+\delta}{1-\delta}\right)^{\frac{p k}{2}} . \\
\frac{1-\delta}{1+\delta} I_{p k} \preceq\left(2 \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2}-I_{p k}\right)^{-1} \preceq \frac{1+\delta}{1-\delta} I_{p k} .
\end{gathered}
$$

Therefore the quantity in the exponent in (4.28) is bounded by:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(2 \frac{1-\delta}{(1+\delta)^{2}}-1\right) b(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1} b(k) \\
\leq & b(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1 / 2}\left[2 \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2}\left(2 \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2}-I_{p k}\right)^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1 / 2}-I_{p k}\right] \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1 / 2} b(k) \\
\leq & \left(2 \frac{1+\delta}{(1-\delta)^{2}}-1\right) b(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1} b(k)
\end{aligned}
$$

Moreover,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\Delta(k)}{1+\delta}=\frac{1}{1+\delta} b(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{-1} b(k) \\
& \leq b(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1} b(k) \\
& \leq \frac{1}{1-\delta} b(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{-1} b(k)=\frac{\Delta(k)}{1-\delta} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Finally,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(\frac{1-\delta}{(1+\delta)^{3}}\right)^{\frac{p k}{2}} \exp \left\{\left(\frac{2(1-\delta)}{(1+\delta)^{2}}-1\right) \frac{\Delta(k)}{1+\delta}\right\} \\
& \leq \mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left[Z_{k}^{2}\right] \leq\left(\frac{1+\delta}{(1-\delta)^{3}}\right)^{\frac{p k}{2}} \exp \left\{\left(\frac{2(1+\delta)}{(1-\delta)^{2}}-1\right) \frac{\Delta(k)}{1-\delta}\right\} \tag{4.29}
\end{align*}
$$

In the case of homogeneous errors the expression for $\log Z_{k}$ reads as

$$
\begin{aligned}
\log Z_{k} & =p k \log \left(\frac{\sigma}{\sigma_{0}}\right)+\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{\sigma^{2}}-\frac{1}{\sigma_{0}^{2}}\right)\left\|\mathbf{V}_{k}^{-1 / 2}\left(y-\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}\right)\right\|^{2} \\
& +\frac{1}{\sigma_{0}^{2}} b(k)^{\top} \mathbf{V}_{k}^{-1}\left(y-\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}\right)-\frac{1}{2 \sigma_{0}^{2}} b(k)^{\top} \mathbf{V}_{k}^{-1} b(k),
\end{aligned}
$$

implying

$$
\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \sigma}\left[Z_{k}^{2}\right]=\left(\frac{\sigma^{2}}{\sigma_{0}^{2}}\right)^{p k}\left(\frac{\sigma_{0}^{2}}{2 \sigma^{2}-\sigma_{0}^{2}}\right)^{\frac{p k}{2}} \exp \left\{\frac{b(k)^{\top} \mathbf{V}_{k}^{-1} b(k)}{2 \sigma^{2}-\sigma_{0}^{2}}\right\}
$$

By the condition (S)

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(\frac{1-\delta}{(1+\delta)^{3}}\right)^{\frac{p k}{2}} \exp \left\{\frac{\Delta_{1}(k)}{\sigma^{2}(1+\delta)}\right\} \\
\leq \mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \sigma}\left[Z_{k}^{2}\right] \leq & \left(\frac{1+\delta}{(1-\delta)^{3}}\right)^{\frac{p k}{2}} \exp \left\{\frac{\Delta_{1}(k)}{\sigma^{2}(1-\delta)}\right\} \tag{4.30}
\end{align*}
$$

where $p$ is the dimension of the parameter set and $k$ is the degree of the localization.

### 2.4.4 Quality of estimation in the nonparametric case: the oracle result

Define the oracle index as the largest index $k \leq K$ such that the small modeling bias condition $(S M B)$ holds, that is

$$
\begin{equation*}
k^{*} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \max \{k \leq K: \Delta(k) \leq \Delta\} \tag{4.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

Theorem 2.4.9. Let $\Delta(1) \leq \Delta$, i.e., the first estimator is always accepted by the testing procedure. Let $k^{*}$ be the oracle index. Then under the conditions $(\mathfrak{D})$, ( $\left.\mathfrak{L o c}\right)$, $(\mathfrak{S}),(\mathcal{W}),(\mathfrak{B})$ the risk between the adaptive estimator and the oracle is bounded by the following expression:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathbb{E}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k^{*}}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right|^{r / 2}  \tag{4.32}\\
\leq & \mathfrak{z}_{k^{*}}^{r / 2}+\left(\alpha \mathbb{E}\left|\chi_{p}^{2}\right|^{r}\right)^{1 / 2}(1+\delta)^{p k^{*} / 4}(1-\delta)^{-3 p k^{*} / 4} \exp \left\{\varphi(\delta) \frac{\Delta}{2(1-\delta)}\right\},
\end{align*}
$$

where $\varphi(\delta)$ is as in Theorem 2.4.8.
Proof. By the definition of the adaptive estimator $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}=\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\widehat{k}}$. Because the events $\left\{\widehat{k} \leq k^{*}\right\}$ and $\left\{\widehat{k}>k^{*}\right\}$ are disjunct one can write

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbb{E}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k^{*}}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right|^{r / 2} \\
= & \mathbb{E}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\widehat{k}}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k^{*}}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\widehat{k}}\right)\right|^{r / 2} \mathbb{I}\left\{\widehat{k} \leq k^{*}\right\} \\
+ & \mathbb{E}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\widehat{k}}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k^{*}}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\widehat{k}}\right)\right|^{r / 2} \mathbb{I}\left\{\widehat{k}>k^{*}\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

If $\widehat{k} \leq k^{*}$ then $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\min \left\{k^{*}, \widehat{k}\right\}}=\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\widehat{k}}$. Thus to bound the first summand it is enough to apply Theorem 2.4.8 with $k=k^{*}$.

To bound the second expectation, i.e. to bound fluctuations of the adaptive estimator $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}$ at the steps of the procedure for which the SMB condition is not fulfilled
anymore, just notice that for $\widehat{k}>k^{*}$ the quadratic form coincides with the test statistic $T_{k^{*}, \widehat{k}}$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k^{*}}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \\
= & \left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\widehat{k}}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k^{*}}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\widehat{k}}\right) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} T_{k^{*}, \widehat{k}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

But the index $\widehat{k}$ was accepted, this means that $T_{l, \widehat{k}} \leq \mathfrak{z}_{l}$ for all $l<\widehat{k}$ and therefore for $l=k^{*}$. Thus

$$
\mathbb{E}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k^{*}}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right|^{r / 2} \mathbb{I}\left\{\widehat{k}>k^{*}\right\} \leq \mathfrak{\mathfrak { z }}_{k^{*}}^{r / 2} .
$$

### 2.4.5 Oracle risk bounds for estimators of the regression function and its derivatives

Theorem 2.4.9 provides an oracle risk bound for the adaptive estimator $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(x)=\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\widehat{k}}(x)$ of the parameter vector $\boldsymbol{\theta}(x) \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$ of the finite-rank expansion from the method of local approximation, see Section 1.2 .3 for details. This is equivalent to the estimation of the parameter of the local linear fit of the form $\boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}$ at the point $x$ to the model (1.1) under misspecification together with the adaptive choice of the degree of localization (of the bandwidth). If the basis is polynomial and the regression function $f(\cdot)$ is sufficiently smooth in a neighborhood of $x$, then $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(x)$ is the adaptive local polynomial estimator $L P^{a d}(p-1)$ of the vector $\left(f^{(0)}(x), \ldots, f^{(p-1)}(x)\right)^{\top}$ of the values of $f$ and its derivatives (if they exist) at the reference point $x \in \mathbb{R}^{d}$ under the model misspecification.

Now we are going to obtain a similar oracle result for the components of the vector $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(x)$, particularly for $\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(x), j=1, \ldots, p$, where $\boldsymbol{e}_{j}=(0, \ldots, 1, \ldots, 0)^{\top}$ is the $j$ th canonical basis vector in $\mathbb{R}^{p}$. As a corollary of this general result in the case of the polynomial basis we get an oracle risk bound for $L P^{a d}(p-1)$ estimators of the function $f$ and its derivatives at the point $x$.

Denote the $L P_{k}(p-1)$ estimator of $f^{(j-1)}(x)$ corresponding to the $k$ th scale by

$$
\begin{align*}
\widetilde{f}_{k}^{(j-1)}(x) & =e_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x), j=1, \ldots, p,  \tag{4.33}\\
\widetilde{f}_{k}(x) & =\widetilde{f}_{k}^{(0)}(x)=e_{1}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x)
\end{align*}
$$

Then the adaptive local polynomial estimators are defined as follows:

$$
\begin{align*}
\widehat{f}^{(j-1)}(x) & =e_{j}^{\top} \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(x), j=1, \ldots, p  \tag{4.34}\\
\widehat{f}(x) & =e_{1}^{\top} \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(x)
\end{align*}
$$

Similarly, the adaptive estimators of the function $f$ and its derivatives corresponding to the $k$ th step of the procedure are given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{f}_{k}^{(j-1)}(x) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} e_{j}^{\top} \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x), j=1, \ldots, p \tag{4.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, if the basis is polynomial, the estimator $\widehat{f}(x) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \widehat{f}^{(0)}(x)$ is the $L P^{a d}(p-1)$ estimator of the value $f(x)$, and $\widehat{f}^{(j-1)}(x)$ with $j=2, \ldots, p$ are, correspondingly, the $L P^{a d}(p-1)$ estimators of the values of its derivatives. We will use the polynomial basis to obtain the rate of convergence, but it should be stressed that the results of Theorems 2.4.9 and 2.4.15hold for any basis satisfying the conditions of the theorems.

We need the following assumptions:
(S1) There exist $0<\sigma_{\min } \leq \sigma_{\max }<\infty$ such that for any $i=1, \ldots, n$ the variance
of the errors in the "approximate" model (1.2) is uniformly bounded:

$$
\sigma_{\min }^{2} \leq \sigma_{i}^{2} \leq \sigma_{\max }^{2}
$$

$\left(\mathfrak{L p}_{1}{ }^{\mathbf{d}}\right)$ Let assumption ( $\left.\mathfrak{S} \mathbf{1}\right)$ be satisfied. There exists a number $\Lambda_{0}>0$ such that for any $k=1, \ldots, K$ the smallest eigenvalue fulfills $\lambda_{p}\left(\mathbf{B}_{k}\right) \geq n h_{k}^{d} \Lambda_{0} \sigma_{\max }^{-2}$ for $n$ sufficiently large.

Then, because $\mathbf{B}_{k} \succ 0$, for any $k=1, \ldots K$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \gamma \leq \frac{\sigma_{\max }^{2}}{n h_{k}^{d} \Lambda_{0}}\|\gamma\|^{2} \tag{4.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

for any $\gamma \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$, and we obtain the following lemma:
Lemma 2.4.10. Let ( $\mathfrak{S l}$ ) and ( $\left.\mathfrak{L p 1}{ }^{\mathrm{d}}\right)$ be satisfied. Then for any $j=1, \ldots, p$ and $k, k^{\prime}=1, \ldots K$ the following upper bound holds:

$$
\left(\frac{n h_{k}^{d} \Lambda_{0}}{\sigma_{\max }^{2}}\right)^{1 / 2}\left|\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{\prime}}\right| \leq\left\|\mathbf{B}_{k}^{1 / 2}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{\prime}}\right)\right\|
$$

Proof. By (4.36) taking $\gamma=\mathbf{B}_{k}^{1 / 2}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{\prime}}\right)$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{\prime}}\right|^{2} & \leq\left\|\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{\prime}}\right\|^{2} \\
& =\left\|\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1 / 2} \mathbf{B}_{k}^{1 / 2}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{\prime}}\right)\right\|^{2} \\
& \leq \frac{\sigma_{\max }^{2}}{n h_{k}^{d} \Lambda_{0}}\left\|\mathbf{B}_{k}^{1 / 2}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{\prime}}\right)\right\|^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

To obtain the "componentwise" oracle risk bounds we need to recheck the "propagation property". First, notice that the "propagation conditions" (3.9) on the choice the critical values $\mathfrak{z}_{1}, \ldots, \mathfrak{z}_{K-1}$ imply the similar bounds for the components $\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x)$. Recall that $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\min \{k, \widehat{k}\}}$. Then, by (3.9), Lemma 2.4.10 and the pivotality property (Lemma 2.6.1) we have the following simple observation:

Lemma 2.4.11. Let ( $\mathfrak{S} \mathfrak{1})$ and $\left(\mathfrak{L p}^{\mathrm{d}}\right)$ be satisfied. Under the propagation conditions $(P C)$ for any $\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$ and all $k=2, \ldots, K$ we have:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\frac{n h_{k}^{d} \Lambda_{0}}{\sigma_{\max }^{2}}\right)^{r} \mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left|\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x)-\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x)\right|^{2 r} & \leq \mathbb{E}_{0, \Sigma}\left\|\mathbf{B}_{k}^{1 / 2}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)\right\|^{2 r} \\
& \leq \alpha C(p, r)
\end{aligned}
$$

Here $\mathbb{E}_{0, \Sigma}$ stands for the expectation w.r.t. the measure $\mathcal{N}(0, \Sigma)$ and $C(p, r)=$ $\mathbb{E}\left|\chi_{p}^{2}\right|^{r}$.

As in the first parts of this chapter to make the notation shorter we will suppress the dependence on $x$. To get the propagation property we study for $k=1, \ldots, K$ the joint distributions of $\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{1}, \ldots, \boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}$, that is the distribution of $\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{k}$, the $j$ th row of the matrix $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{k}$, under the null and under the alternative. Obviously,

$$
\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}\left[\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{k}\right]=\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}^{*}=\left(\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}_{1}^{*}, \ldots, \boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right),
$$

and the mean under the null (the true parameter in the parametric set-up) is:

$$
\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left[\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{k}\right]=\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}=\left(\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}, \ldots, \boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}\right) .
$$

Recall that the matrices $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}$ and $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}$ have a block structure. Now, for instance, to study the estimator of the first coordinate of the "best parametric fit" vector (or of $f(x)$ in the case of the polynomial basis) we take the first elements of each block and so on. Denote the $k \times k$ covariance matrices of $j$ th elements of the vectors $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{1}, \ldots, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}$ by

$$
\begin{align*}
\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j} & \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left\{\operatorname{cov}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left[\widetilde{\theta}_{l}^{(j)}, \widetilde{\theta}_{m}^{(j)}\right]\right\}_{1 \leq l \leq m \leq k} \\
& =\mathbf{D}_{k, j}\left(J_{k} \otimes \Sigma\right) \mathbf{D}_{k, j}^{\top} \text { under the null, }  \tag{4.37}\\
\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j} & \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left\{\operatorname{cov}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}\left[\widetilde{\theta}_{l}^{(j)}, \widetilde{\theta}_{m}^{(j)}\right]\right\}_{1 \leq l \leq m \leq k} \\
& =\mathbf{D}_{k, j}\left(J_{k} \otimes \Sigma_{0}\right) \mathbf{D}_{k, j}^{\top} \text { under the alternative, } \tag{4.38}
\end{align*}
$$

where $J_{k}$ is a $k \times k$ matrix with all its elements equal to 1 , and the $k \times n k$ block diagonal matrices $\mathbf{D}_{k, j}$ is defined by

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathbf{D}_{k, j} & \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} D_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus \boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} D_{k},=\left(I_{k} \otimes \boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top}\right) \mathbf{D}_{k} \\
D_{l} & \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{l}, \quad l=1, \ldots, k \tag{4.39}
\end{align*}
$$

Moreover, the following representation holds:

$$
\begin{align*}
\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j} & =\left(I_{k} \otimes \boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top}\right) \mathbf{D}_{k}\left(J_{k} \otimes \Sigma\right) \mathbf{D}_{k}^{\top}\left(I_{k} \otimes \boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top}\right)^{\top} \\
& =\left(I_{k} \otimes \boldsymbol{e}_{j}\right)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}\left(I_{k} \otimes \boldsymbol{e}_{j}\right) \tag{4.40}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}$ is defined by (4.17). Similarly,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}=\left(I_{k} \otimes \boldsymbol{e}_{j}\right)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}\left(I_{k} \otimes \boldsymbol{e}_{j}\right) \tag{4.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, the important relation (4.20) is preserved for $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}$ and $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}$ obtained by picking the $(j, j)$ th elements of each block of $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}$ and $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}$ respectively.

With usual notation $\gamma^{(j)}$ for the $j$ th component of $\gamma \in \mathbb{R}^{k}$, denote by

$$
\begin{align*}
b_{j}(k) & \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left(\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{1}^{*}-\boldsymbol{\theta}\right), \ldots, \boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}-\boldsymbol{\theta}\right)\right)^{\top} \\
& =\left(\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{1}^{*}-\boldsymbol{\theta}\right)^{(j)}, \ldots,\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}-\boldsymbol{\theta}\right)^{(j)}\right)^{\top} \in \mathbb{R}^{k},  \tag{4.42}\\
\Delta_{j}(k) & \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} b_{j}(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{-1} b_{j}(k) . \tag{4.43}
\end{align*}
$$

Theorem 2.4.12. ("Componentwise" propagation property)
Under the conditions $(\mathfrak{D}),(\mathfrak{L o c}),(\mathfrak{S}),(\mathfrak{S} \mathbf{l}),(P C),(\mathfrak{B}),(\mathcal{W})$ and $\left(\mathfrak{L p} \mathbf{1}^{\mathrm{d}}\right)$ for any $k \leq K$ the following upper bound holds:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\frac{n h_{k}^{d} \Lambda_{0}}{\sigma_{\max }^{2}}\right)^{r / 2} \mathbb{E}\left|\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x)-\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x)\right|^{r} \\
\leq & \left(\alpha \mathbb{E}\left|\chi_{p}^{2}\right|^{r}\right)^{1 / 2}(1+\delta)^{p k / 4}(1-\delta)^{-3 p k / 4} \exp \left\{\varphi(\delta) \frac{\Delta_{j}(k)}{2(1-\delta)}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\varphi(\delta) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \begin{cases}1 & \text { for homogeneous errors, } \\ \frac{2(1+\delta)}{(1-\delta)^{2}}-1 & \text { otherwise. }\end{cases}$
Corollary 2.4.13. Let the basis be polynomial. Then under the conditions of the preceding theorem the following upper bound holds:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\frac{n h_{k}^{d} \Lambda_{0}}{\sigma_{\max }^{2}}\right)^{r / 2} \mathbb{E}\left|\widetilde{f}_{k}^{(j-1)}(x)-\widehat{f}_{k}^{(j-1)}(x)\right|^{r} \\
\leq & \left(\alpha \mathbb{E}\left|\chi_{p}^{2}\right|^{r}\right)^{1 / 2}(1+\delta)^{p k / 4}(1-\delta)^{-3 p k / 4} \exp \left\{\varphi(\delta) \frac{\Delta_{j}(k)}{2(1-\delta)}\right\},
\end{aligned}
$$

with $\varphi(\delta)$ as before.

Proof. The proof essentially follows the line of the proof of Theorem [2.4.8. If the distributions of vec $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{k}$ under the null and under the alternative were Gaussian, then any subvector is also Gaussian. Denote by $\mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}^{k, j}=\mathcal{N}\left(\left(\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}, \ldots, \boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}\right)^{\top}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}\right)$ and by $\mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}^{k, j}=\mathcal{N}\left(\left(\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}_{1}^{*}, \ldots, \boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}_{k}^{*}\right)^{\top}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}\right), k=1, \ldots, K$, the distributions of $e_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{k}$ under the null and under the alternative.

By the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality and Lemma 2.4.11

$$
\left(\frac{n h_{k}^{d} \Lambda_{0}}{\sigma_{\max }^{2}}\right)^{r / 2} \mathbb{E}\left|\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x)-\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(x)\right|^{r} \leq\left(\alpha \mathbb{E}\left|\chi_{p}^{2}\right|^{r}\right)^{1 / 2}\left(\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left[Z_{k, j}^{2}\right]\right)^{1 / 2}
$$

with the Radon-Nikodym derivative given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z_{k, j} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \frac{\mathrm{d} \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}^{k, j}}{\mathrm{~d} \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}^{k, j}} \tag{4.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

By inequalities (4.40) and (4.41) the analog of Assumption (S) is preserved for $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}$ and $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}$, that is, there exists $\delta \in[0,1)$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
(1-\delta) \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j} \preceq \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j} \preceq(1+\delta) \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j} \tag{4.45}
\end{equation*}
$$

for any $k \leq K$ and $j=1, \ldots, p$. By the Taylor expansion at the point $\left(\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}, \ldots, \boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}\right)^{\top}$ with $\xi_{j} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(0, I_{k}\right)$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}}\left[Z_{k, j}^{2}\right] \\
= & \frac{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}}{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}} \exp \left\{-\left\|\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}^{-1 / 2} b_{j}(k)\right\|^{2}\right\} \\
\times & \mathbb{E}\left[\exp \left\{-\left\|\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}^{-1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{1 / 2} \xi_{j}\right\|^{2}+\left\|\xi_{j}\right\|^{2}+2 b_{j}(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{1 / 2} \xi_{j}\right\}\right] \\
= & \frac{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}}{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}} \prod_{l=1}^{k}\left[2 \lambda_{l}\left(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{1 / 2}\right)-1\right]^{-1 / 2} \\
\times & \exp \left\{b_{j}(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}^{-1 / 2}\left[2 \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}^{-1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{1 / 2}\left(2 \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{1 / 2}-I_{k}\right)^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}^{-1 / 2}-I_{k}\right] \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}^{-1 / 2} b_{j}(k)\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now utilizing (4.45) we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1-\delta}{1+\delta} I_{k} \preceq\left(2 \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{1 / 2}-I_{k}\right)^{-1} \preceq \frac{1+\delta}{1-\delta} I_{k}, \\
& 2 \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}^{-1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{1 / 2}\left(2 \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{1 / 2}-I_{k}\right)^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}^{-1 / 2}-I_{k} \\
\preceq & 2 \frac{1+\delta}{1-\delta} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}^{-1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}^{-1 / 2}-I_{k} \\
\preceq & \left(2 \frac{1+\delta}{(1-\delta)^{2}}-1\right) I_{k}, \\
& \frac{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}}{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j} \leq\left(\frac{1}{1-\delta}\right)^{k},} \begin{array}{l}
\quad \prod_{l=1}^{k}\left[2 \lambda_{l}\left(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{1 / 2}\right)-1\right]^{-1 / 2} \leq\left(\frac{1+\delta}{1-\delta}\right)^{\frac{k}{2}} .
\end{array} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Finally, because $b_{j}(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0, j}^{-1} b_{j}(k) \leq \Delta_{j}(k)(1-\delta)^{-1}$, we obtain the bound for the second moment of the Radon-Nikodym derivative:

$$
\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left[Z_{k, j}^{2}\right] \leq\left(\frac{1+\delta}{(1-\delta)^{3}}\right)^{\frac{k}{2}} \exp \left\{\varphi(\delta) \frac{\Delta_{j}(k)}{1-\delta}\right\}
$$

which completes the proof.

At this point we introduce the following "componentwise" small modeling dias conditions:
$(\boldsymbol{S M B} \boldsymbol{j}) \quad$ Let there exist for some $j=1, \ldots, p$, some $k(j) \leq K$ and some $\theta^{(j)}=$ $e_{j}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}$ a constant $\Delta_{j} \geq 0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{j}(k(j)) \leq \Delta_{j} \tag{4.46}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\Delta_{j}(k)$ is defined by (4.43).

Definition 2.4.14. For each $j=1, \ldots, p$ the oracle index $k^{*}(j)$ is defined as the largest index in the scale for which the (SMBj) condition holds, that is,

$$
\begin{equation*}
k^{*}(j)=\max \left\{k \leq K: \Delta_{j}(k) \leq \Delta_{j}\right\} . \tag{4.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

Theorem 2.4.15. Let the smallest bandwidth $h_{1}$ be such that the first estimator $\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{1}(x)$ be always accepted in the adaptive procedure. Let $k^{*}(j)$ be the oracle index defined by (4.47), $j=1, \ldots, p$. Assume ( $\mathfrak{D}$ ), ( $\mathfrak{L o c}$ ), $(\mathfrak{S}),(\mathfrak{B}),(P C),(\mathcal{W})$, ( $\mathfrak{S} 1)$ and $\left(\mathfrak{L p} 1^{\mathrm{d}}\right)$. Then the risk between the $j$ th coordinates of the adaptive estimator and the oracle is bounded with the following expression:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(\frac{n h_{k^{*}(j)}^{d} \Lambda_{0}}{\sigma_{\max }^{2}}\right)^{r / 2} \mathbb{E}\left|\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}(j)}(x)-\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(x)\right|^{r}  \tag{4.48}\\
\leq & {\stackrel{\mathfrak{z}}{k^{*}(j)}}_{r / 2}^{2}+\left(\alpha \mathbb{E}\left|\chi_{p}^{2}\right|^{r}\right)^{1 / 2}(1+\delta)^{p k_{j}^{*} / 4}(1-\delta)^{-3 p k_{j}^{*} / 4} \exp \left\{\varphi(\delta) \frac{\Delta_{j}}{2(1-\delta)}\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\varphi(\delta)$ as in Theorem 2.4.12.

Corollary 2.4.16. Let the basis be polynomial. Under the conditions of the preceding theorem, the risk between the adaptive estimator $L P^{a d}(p-1)$ of the value of the $j$ th
derivative of $f$ at $x$ and the oracle is bounded with the following expression:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\frac{n h_{k^{*}(j)}^{d} \Lambda_{0}}{\sigma_{\max }^{2}}\right)^{r / 2} \mathbb{E}\left|\widetilde{f}_{k^{*}(j)}^{(j-1)}(x)-\widehat{f}^{(j-1)}(x)\right|^{r} \\
\leq & \mathfrak{z}_{k^{*}(j)}^{r / 2}+\left(\alpha \mathbb{E}\left|\chi_{p}^{2}\right|^{r}\right)^{1 / 2}(1+\delta)^{p k_{j}^{*} / 4}(1-\delta)^{-3 p k_{j}^{*} / 4} \exp \left\{\varphi(\delta) \frac{\Delta_{j}}{2(1-\delta)}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

with $\varphi(\delta)$ as before.

Proof. To simplify the notation we suppress the dependence on $j$ in the index $k$. Similarly to the proof of Theorem (2.4.9) we consider disjunct events $\left\{\widehat{k} \leq k^{*}\right\}$ and $\left\{\widehat{k}>k^{*}\right\}$. Therefore,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbb{E}\left|\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}(x)-\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(x)\right|^{r} \\
= & \mathbb{E}\left|\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}(x)-\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(x)\right|^{r} \mathbb{I}\left\{\widehat{k} \leq k^{*}\right\} \\
+ & \mathbb{E}\left|\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}(x)-\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(x)\right|^{r} \mathbb{I}\left\{\widehat{k}>k^{*}\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

By Lemma 2.4.10 and the definition of the test statistic $T_{k^{*}, \widehat{k}}$ the second summand can be easily bounded:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\frac{n h_{k^{*}}^{d} \Lambda_{0}}{\sigma_{\max }^{2}}\right)^{r / 2} \mathbb{E}\left|\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}(x)-\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(x)\right|^{r} \mathbb{I}\left\{\widehat{k}>k^{*}\right\} \\
\leq & \mathbb{E}\left\|\mathbf{B}_{k^{*}}^{1 / 2}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^{*}}(x)-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(x)\right)\right\|^{r} \mathbb{I}\left\{\widehat{k}>k^{*}\right\} \\
\leq & \mathfrak{z}_{k^{*}}^{r / 2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

To bound the first summand we use the "componentwise" analog of Theorem 2.4.8, particularly Theorem 2.4.12, and this completes the proof.

### 2.5 Rates of convergence

### 2.5.1 Minimax rate of spatially adaptive local polynomial estimators

In this section we give some basic information on spatial adaptation and present the rate of convergence of the adaptive local polynomial estimator $L P^{a d}(p-1)$ of $f(x)$. Let us recall that Donoho and Johnstone in [14] suggested how to measure the quality of adaptive estimators. The authors called this approach "the ideal spatial adaptation" and defined it as a level of performance which would be achieved by smoothing with knowledge of the best "oracle" scheme. The estimator corresponding to this scheme is called an "oracle". The adaptive methods try to construct an estimator which mimics the performance of the oracle in some sense, for example, in terms of the risk of estimation. Inequalities relating the risk of the adaptive estimator to the risk of the oracle are usually referred to as "oracle inequalities". The results obtained in Section 2.4.4 belong to this family.

To simplify the representation in this section we consider a univariate design in $[0,1]$. The generalization to the multidimensional case is straightforward. Fix a point $x \in[0,1]$ and a method of localization $w_{(\cdot)}$. In this section we also assume that the basis is polynomial and centered at $x$, that is $\psi_{1} \equiv 1$ and $\psi_{j}(t)=(t-$ $x)^{j-1} /(j-1)$ ! with $j=2, \ldots, p$. As in Section 1.2 we denote for any $k=1, \ldots, K$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{f}_{k}(x) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x) \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

the local polynomial estimator of order $p-1$ of $f(x)$ corresponding to the $k$ th scale
with the bandwidth $h_{k}=h_{k}(x)$, or just the $L P_{k}(p-1)$ estimator of $f(x)$ for short. Here $\boldsymbol{e}_{1} \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$ is the first canonical basis vector $(1,0, \ldots, 0)^{\top}$. As before we assume that

$$
\frac{1}{n}<h_{1}<\ldots<h_{k}<\ldots h_{K} \leq 1
$$

and therefore that the ordering condition $(\mathcal{W})$ is satisfied. Denote the adaptive local polynomial estimator $L P^{a d}(p-1)$ of $f(x)$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{f}(x) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \widetilde{f}_{\widehat{k}}(x)=\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(x) \tag{5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(x)$ defined by (3.1). To obtain bounds for the risk of the adaptive estimator in [14], [22] and [41] it was suggested to compare the $\operatorname{MSE}(x)$ (the $L_{r}$-risk in [22]) corresponding to the adaptive estimator $\widehat{f}(x)$ with the infimum over all scales of the mean squared risks (the $L_{r}$-risks, respectively) of nonadaptive estimators $\widetilde{f}_{l}(x)$, $l=1, \ldots, K$. That is we compare $\mathbb{E}_{f}\left[|\widehat{f}(x)-f(x)|^{2}\right]$ with the "best" risk of the form $\mathbb{E}_{f}\left[\left|\widetilde{f}_{l}(x)-f(x)\right|^{2}\right]$. Clearly, for any $l$ by the bias-variance decomposition and by (2.8) we have

$$
\mathbb{E}_{f}\left[\left|\widetilde{f}_{l}(x)-f(x)\right|^{2}\right]=b_{l, f}^{2}(x)+\sigma_{l}^{2}(x)
$$

where the variance term is defined by

$$
\sigma_{l}^{2}(x) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \mathbb{E}_{f}\left[\left|\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}(x)-\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}(x)\right|^{2}\right]
$$

and the bias is given by

$$
b_{l, f}(x) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}(x)-f(x)
$$

Here

$$
\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}(x)=\mathbb{E}_{f}\left[\widetilde{f}_{l}(x)\right]=\sum_{i=1}^{n} W_{l, i}^{*}(x) f\left(X_{i}\right)
$$

is a local linear smoother of the function $f$ at the point $x$ corresponding to the $l$ th scale, see Section 1.2 for details. The polynomial weights $W_{l, i}^{*}$ now are defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
W_{l, i}^{*}(x)=\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1} \Psi_{i} \frac{w_{l, i}(x)}{\sigma_{i}^{2}} \tag{5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\mathbf{B}_{l}$ defined by (2.4). The columns of the "design" matrix $\boldsymbol{\Psi}$ are given by:

$$
\Psi_{i}=\Psi\left(X_{i}-x\right)=\left(1, X_{i}-x, \ldots,\left(X_{i}-x\right)^{p-1} /(p-1)!\right)^{\top}
$$

With this notation the ideal spatial adaptation can be expressed as follows (see [41):

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{MSE}^{i d}(x)=\inf _{1 \leq k \leq K}\left\{\bar{b}_{k, f}^{2}(x)+\sigma_{k}^{2}(x)\right\} \tag{5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where for any $k$ the first summand

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{b}_{k, f}(x) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \sup _{1 \leq l \leq k}\left|b_{l, f}(x)\right|=\sup _{1 \leq l \leq k}\left|\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}(x)-f(x)\right| \tag{5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

reflects the local smoothness of $f$ within the largest interval $\left[x-h_{k}, x+h_{k}\right]$, containing intervals $\left[x-h_{l}, x+h_{l}\right]$ with $1 \leq l<k$. Indeed, the smoothness of a function can be defined via the quality of its approximation by polynomials, see [17] for example. The bandwidth $h^{\star}=h^{\star}\left(x, w_{(\cdot)}, f(\cdot)\right)$ providing a trade-off between $\bar{b}_{k, f}^{2}(x)$ and the variance term could be called an "ideal" or "oracle" bandwidth. Unfortunately, as it is generally in nonparametric estimation, we cannot minimize the right-hand side of (5.4) directly because it depends on the unknown function $f$. The lack of information about $f$ can be compensated by the assumption that $f$ belongs to some smoothness class, see [26]. This technique in the nonadaptive set-up under the assumption that $f \in \Sigma(\beta, L)$ on $[0,1]$ is demonstrated in Section 1.2 .2 for the local polynomial approximation of order $p-1=\lfloor\beta\rfloor$. Here the use of (5.5) or of the SMB conditions
allows to adapt not to the functional class but to the smoothness properties of the function $f$ itself.

In the pointwise adaptation framework due to Lepski [38], see also [8], it was discovered that the relation (5.4) "does not work". This means that an adaptive estimator satisfying (5.4) does not exist. In pointwise estimation one has to pay an additional logarithmic factor $d(n)$ for proceeding without knowledge of the regularity properties of $f$. It was proved in [38] and [40] that this factor $d(n)$ is unavoidable and is of order $\log n$, where $n$ is the sample size. In [42] for kernel smoothing in the Gaussian white noise model (in our set-up under regularity assumptions on the design this is the case of $p=1, \delta=0$ and $\left.\sigma_{i} \equiv \sigma\right)$, it was shown that $d(n)$ depends on the range of adaptation, that is on the ratio of the largest bandwidth to the smallest one and that $d(n)$ is not larger in order than $\log n$. This phenomenon can be expressed as an increase of the noise level leading to the adaptive upper bound for the squared risk (see [41]) in the following form:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{MSE}^{a d}(x)=\inf _{1 \leq k \leq K}\left\{\bar{b}_{k, f}^{2}(x)+\sigma_{k}^{2}(x) d(n)\right\} \tag{5.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

This relationship (see [42]) can be written in the form of a "balance equation":

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{b}_{k, f}(x)=C(w) \sigma_{k}(x) \sqrt{d(n)} \tag{5.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

with

$$
\begin{equation*}
d(n)=\log \left(\frac{h_{K}}{h_{1}}\right) \tag{5.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

The optimal selection of the constant $C(w)$ provides sharp oracle results. The bandwidth $h^{\star}=h_{k^{\star}}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
k^{\star}=\max \left\{k \leq K: \bar{b}_{k, f}(x) \leq C(w) \sigma_{k}(x) \sqrt{d(n)}\right\} \tag{5.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

is called the "ideal adaptive bandwidth" or just the "oracle bandwidth".
Before the proceeding with the analysis of the convergence rate, let us point out that the weights $W_{l, i}^{*}(x)$ defined by (5.3) preserve the reproducing polynomials property:

Proposition 2.5.1. Let $x \in \mathbb{R}$ be such that $\mathbf{B}_{1}=\sum_{i=1}^{n} \Psi_{i} \Psi_{i}^{\top} w_{1, i}(x) \sigma_{i}^{-2} \succ 0$. Then the weights defined by (5.3) satisfy

$$
\begin{align*}
& \sum_{i=1}^{n} W_{l, i}^{*}(x)=1  \tag{5.10}\\
& \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(X_{i}-x\right)^{m} W_{l, i}^{*}(x)=0, \quad m=1, \ldots, p-1
\end{align*}
$$

for all $l=1, \ldots, K$ and design points $\left\{X_{1}, \ldots, X_{n}\right\}$.

Proof. By Assumption ( $\mathcal{W}$ ), if $\mathbf{B}_{1} \succ 0$ at some point $x$, then $\mathbf{B}_{l}=\mathbf{B}_{l}(x) \succ 0$ for all $l=1, \ldots, K$, and the assertion follows from the proof of Proposition 1.2.2,

To simplify the study of (5.6) we need to introduce the following assumptions:
$\left(\mathfrak{L p} \mathbf{1}^{\prime}\right)$ Assume ( $\left.\mathfrak{S} \mathbf{l}\right)$. There exists a number $\lambda_{0}>0$ such that for any $k=$ $1, \ldots, K$ the smallest eigenvalue fulfills $\lambda_{p}\left(\mathbf{B}_{k}\right) \geq n h_{k} \lambda_{0} \sigma_{\max }^{-2}$ for sufficiently large $n$.
$\left(\mathfrak{L p}^{\prime}{ }^{\prime}\right)$ There exists a real number $a_{0}>0$ such that for any interval $A \subseteq[0,1]$ and all $n \geq 1$

$$
\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \mathbb{I}\left\{X_{i} \in A\right\} \leq a_{0} \max \left\{\int_{A} \mathrm{~d} t, \frac{1}{n}\right\}
$$

$\left(\mathfrak{L p} 3^{\prime}\right) \quad$ The localizing functions (kernels) $w_{k, i}$ are compactly supported in $[0,1]$ with

$$
w_{k, i}(x)=0 \quad \text { if } \quad\left|X_{i}-x\right|>h_{k} .
$$

This immediately implies the similar property for the local polynomial weights:

$$
W_{k, i}^{*}(x)=0 \quad \text { if } \quad\left|X_{i}-x\right|>h_{k}
$$

$\left(\mathfrak{L p} 4^{\prime}\right) \quad$ There exists a finite number $w_{\max }$ such that

$$
\sup _{k, i}\left|w_{k, i}(x)\right| \leq w_{\max }
$$

 the uniformity in $x$.

Remark 2.5.2. Assumption ( $\mathfrak{S}_{\perp}$ ) implies that the conditional number

$$
\begin{equation*}
\kappa(\Sigma) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \frac{\sigma_{\max }^{2}}{\sigma_{\min }^{2}} \tag{5.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

of the covariance matrix in the known "wrong" model (1.2) is finite.

Theorem 2.5.2. Assume $(\mathcal{W})$, ( $\mathfrak{S})$, ( $\mathfrak{S} 1),\left(\mathfrak{L p ı}{ }^{\prime}\right)-\left(\mathfrak{L p} 4^{\prime}\right)$ and that the smallest bandwidth $h_{1} \geq \frac{1}{2 n}$. Let $f \in \Sigma(\beta, L)$ on $[0,1]$ and let $\left\{\widetilde{f}_{k}(x)\right\}_{k=1}^{K}$ be the $L P_{k}(p-1)$ estimators of $f(x)$ with $p-1=\lfloor\beta\rfloor$. Then for sufficiently large $n$ and any $h_{k}$ satisfying $h_{K}>\ldots>h_{k}>\ldots>h_{1}, k=1, \ldots, K$, the following upper bounds hold:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|\bar{b}_{k, f}(x)\right| & \leq C_{2} \kappa(\Sigma) \frac{L h_{k}^{\beta}}{(p-1)!} \\
\sigma_{k}^{2}(x) & \leq(1+\delta) \frac{\sigma_{\max }^{2}}{n h_{k} \lambda_{0}}
\end{aligned}
$$

with $C_{2}=2 w_{\max } a_{0} \sqrt{e} / \lambda_{0}$ and $\delta \in[0,1)$.
Moreover, the choice of a positive bandwidth $h=h^{\star}(n)$ (see (15.15) for the precise formula) in the form:

$$
h^{\star}(n)=\mathcal{O}\left(\left(\frac{d(n)}{n}\right)^{\frac{1}{2 \beta+1}}\right)
$$

provides the following upper bound for the risk of adaptive estimator:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varlimsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sup _{f \in \Sigma(\beta, L)} \mathbb{E}_{f}\left[\psi_{n}^{-2}|\widehat{f}(x)-f(x)|^{2}\right] \leq C \tag{5.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{n}=\mathcal{O}\left(\left(\frac{d(n)}{n}\right)^{\frac{\beta}{2 \beta+1}}\right) \tag{5.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

is given by (5.16) and the constant $C$ is finite and depends on $\beta, L, \sigma_{\min }^{2}, \sigma_{\max }^{2}$, $p, w_{\max }$ and $a_{0}$ only.

Remark 2.5.3. The bound for $\sigma_{k}^{2}(x)$ is simple than the corresponding one from Theorem 1.2 .4 due to the assumption of normality of the vector of errors $\left(\varepsilon \sim \mathcal{N}\left(0, I_{n}\right)\right)$ in the models (1.1)-(1.2).

Remark 2.5.4. Recall that in 42$]$ it was shown that the "adaptive factor" $d(n)$ cannot be less in order than $\log \left(h_{K} h_{1}^{-1}\right)$.

Proof. The bound for $\left|b_{l, f}(x)\right|$ at the point $x$ is obtained as in the proof of Theorem 1.2 .4 by application of the second assertion of Lemma 1.2.3, so we skip some details. By Proposition 2.5 .1 and the Taylor theorem with $\tau_{i}$ such that the points $\tau_{i} X_{i}$ are between $X_{i}$ and $x$, and utilizing Assumption ( $\left.\mathfrak{L p} 3\right)$ we have:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|b_{l, f}(x)\right| & \leq \frac{1}{(p-1)!} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left|f^{(p-1)}\left(\tau_{i} X_{i}\right)-f^{(p-1)}(x)\right|\left|X_{i}-x\right|^{p-1}\left|W_{l, i}^{*}(x)\right| \\
& \leq \frac{L}{(p-1)!} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left|\tau_{i} X_{i}-x\right|^{\beta-(p-1)}\left|X_{i}-x\right|^{p-1}\left|W_{l, i}^{*}(x)\right| \\
& \leq \frac{L h_{l}^{\beta}}{(p-1)!} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left|W_{l, i}^{*}(x)\right| .
\end{aligned}
$$

Under the assumptions of the theorem the sum of the polynomial weights can be
bounded as follows:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left|W_{l, i}^{*}(x)\right| & \leq w_{\max } \sum_{i=1}^{n} \sigma_{i}^{-2}\left\|\mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1} \Psi_{i}\right\| \\
& \leq \kappa(\Sigma) \frac{w_{\max }}{\lambda_{0} n h_{l}} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left\|\Psi_{i}\right\| \mathbb{I}\left\{X_{i} \in\left[x-h_{l}, x+h_{l}\right]\right\} \\
& \leq \kappa(\Sigma) \frac{w_{\max } \sqrt{e}}{\lambda_{0}} a_{0} \max \left\{2, \frac{1}{n h_{l}}\right\} \\
& \leq \kappa(\Sigma) \frac{2 a_{0} w_{\max } \sqrt{e}}{\lambda_{0}}
\end{aligned}
$$

and the first assertion is justified in view of

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{b}_{k, f}(x) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \sup _{1 \leq l \leq k}\left|b_{l, f}(x)\right| \leq \kappa(\Sigma) \frac{2 a_{0} w_{\max } \sqrt{e} a_{0}}{\lambda_{0}} \frac{L h_{k}^{\beta}}{(p-1)!} \tag{5.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

To bound the variance just notice that, because $\mathbf{B}_{k}$ is symmetric and non-degenerate, by ( $\mathfrak{L p ı}{ }^{\prime}$ ) for any $\gamma \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$ it holds:

$$
\gamma^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \gamma \leq \frac{\sigma_{\max }^{2}}{n h_{k} \lambda_{0}}\|\gamma\|^{2}
$$

Then under Assumption (S) by (4.10) for the variance term we have:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sigma_{k}^{2}(x) & =\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \operatorname{Var} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k} \boldsymbol{e}_{1} \\
& \leq(1+\delta) \boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{e}_{1} \\
& \leq(1+\delta) \frac{\sigma_{\max }^{2}}{n h_{k} \lambda_{0}}
\end{aligned}
$$

By (5.6),

$$
\operatorname{MSE}^{a d}(x) \leq \inf _{1 \leq k \leq K}\left\{\widetilde{C}_{2} h_{k}^{2 \beta}+\frac{\widetilde{C}_{1} d(n)}{n h_{k}}\right\}
$$

with $\widetilde{C}_{2}=\left(C_{2} L \kappa(\Sigma) /(p-1)!\right)^{2}$ and $\widetilde{C}_{1}=(1+\delta) \sigma_{\max }^{2} \lambda_{0}^{-1}$. The choice of a bandwidth of the form:

$$
\begin{equation*}
h^{\star}(n)=\widetilde{C}\left(\frac{(p-1)!}{L \kappa(\Sigma)}\right)^{\frac{2}{2 \beta+1}}\left((1+\delta) \sigma_{\max }^{2} \frac{d(n)}{n}\right)^{\frac{1}{2 \beta+1}} \tag{5.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

minimizes the upper bound for the $\operatorname{MSE}^{a d}(x)$ and provides the rate $\psi_{n}$ w.r.t. the square loss function and over a Hölder class $\Sigma(\beta, L)$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{n}=C\left(\frac{L \kappa(\Sigma)}{(p-1)!}\right)^{\frac{1}{2 \beta+1}}\left((1+\delta) \sigma_{\max }^{2} \frac{d(n)}{n}\right)^{\frac{\beta}{2 \beta+1}} \tag{5.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Here $\widetilde{C}$ and $C$ depend only on $w_{\max }, a_{0}, \lambda_{0}$ and $\beta$.

### 2.5.2 SMB, the bias-variance trade-off and the rate of convergence

The choice of the "ideal adaptive bandwidth" usually can be done by (5.9). In [66] it was shown that the small modeling bias (SMB1) condition (4.46) can be obtained from the "bias-variance trade-off" relations. Unfortunately, to have the "modeling bias" $\Delta(k)=\mathcal{O}(1)$ (this is $\Delta_{1}(k)$ in the present framework) one should apply the balance equation (5.7) or (5.9) without the "adaptive factor" $d(n)$, see equation (3.5) in [66]. In the Gaussian regression set-up (example 1.1 in [66] ) under smoothness assumptions on the regression function $f \in \Sigma(\beta, L)$ this results in a suboptimal rate in the upper bound for the $\operatorname{MSE}(x)$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
\psi_{n} & =\mathcal{O}\left(L^{\frac{1}{2 \beta+1}} n^{-\frac{\beta}{2 \beta+1}} \sqrt{\log n}\right) \\
& =\mathcal{O}\left(L^{\frac{1}{2 \beta+1}}\left(\frac{\log ^{\gamma} n}{n}\right)^{\frac{\beta}{2 \beta+1}}\right) \tag{5.17}
\end{align*}
$$

with $\gamma=\frac{2 \beta+1}{2 \beta}>1$. Notice that, due to the normalization by $\sqrt{\operatorname{Var}\left[\widetilde{\theta_{l}}\right]}$, the adaptive procedure used in [66] coincides with Lepski's selection rule from [38] and 42]. Because local constant Gaussian regression under a regularity assumption on the design is equivalent to the Gaussian white noise model, it is known from these papers that
this procedure is rate optimal with the minimax rate $\psi_{n}=\mathcal{O}\left(L^{\frac{1}{2 \beta+1}}\left(\frac{\log n}{n}\right)^{\frac{\beta}{2 \beta+1}}\right)$, that is, $\gamma$ should be equal to 1 . This shows that the method of obtaining the upper bounds from [66] and generalized in the present work should be refined. This lack of optimality was also independently noticed in 58.

Now we will demonstrate that: (1) the definition of the "ideal adaptive bandwidth" (5.9) with $d(n)=1$ implies the ( $S M B j$ ) conditions; (2) for Lepski's selection rule in our framework we have the same rate for the upper bound of the risk as in equation (5.17).

Notice that for the method of local approximation using of the polynomial basis centered at $x$ the definition of the "ideal adaptive bandwidth" (5.9) can be easily generalized for the estimators of the derivatives of $f$ defined by (4.33). Then, given a point $x$ and the method of localization $w_{(\cdot)}$, for any $j=1, \ldots, p$ the formula (5.9) reads as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
k^{\star}(j)=\max \left\{k \leq K: \bar{b}_{k, f^{(j-1)}}(x) \leq C_{j}(w) \sigma_{k}(x) \sqrt{d(n)}\right\}, \tag{5.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $C_{j}(w)$ is a constant depending on the choice of the smoother $w_{(\cdot)}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\bar{b}_{k, f^{(j-1)}}(x) & =\sup _{1 \leq l \leq k}\left|\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}(x)-f^{(j-1)}(x)\right|, \\
\sigma_{k}^{2}(x) & =\operatorname{Var}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}\left[\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x)\right],
\end{aligned}
$$

and $f^{(0)}$ stands for the function $f$ itself. To bound the "modeling bias" $\Delta_{j}(k)$ we need the following assumption:
( $\mathfrak{S k j}) \quad$ There exists a constant $s_{j}>0$ such that for all $k \leq K$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{-1} \preceq s_{j} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j, \text { diag }}^{-1}, \tag{5.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j, \text { diag }}=\operatorname{diag}\left(\operatorname{Var}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left[\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{1}(x)\right], \ldots, \operatorname{Var}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}\left[\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}(x)\right]\right)$ is a diagonal matrix composed of the diagonal elements of $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}$. Thus we have the following result:

Theorem 2.5.3. Assume $(\mathfrak{B})$, (S) and $(\mathfrak{S} k j)$. Let the weights $\left\{w_{k, i}(x)\right\}$ satisfy (6.3). Then for any given point $x$, smoothing function $w_{(\cdot)}$ and $j=1, \ldots, p$ the choice of $k(j)=k^{\star}(j)$ defined by the relation (5.18) with $d(n)=1$ implies the $(S M B j)$ condition $\Delta_{j}(k(j)) \leq \Delta_{j}$ with the constant $\Delta_{j}=s_{j} C_{j}^{2}(w)(1+\delta)\left(1-u_{0}^{-1}\right)^{-1}$. Proof. Consider the quantity $b_{j}(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j, d i a g}^{-1} b_{j}(k)$. Suppose that $\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}(x)=f^{(j-1)}(x)$. In view of relation (6.3) for the weights $\left\{w_{l, i}(x)\right\}$ the form of the matrix $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j, \text { diag }}$ is particularly simple:

$$
\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j, \text { diag }}=\operatorname{diag}\left(\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{1}^{-1} \boldsymbol{e}_{j}, \ldots, \boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{e}_{j}\right)
$$

Then by ( $\mathfrak{B}$ ) and (4.10)

$$
\begin{aligned}
b_{j}(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j, d i a g}^{-1} b_{j}(k) & =\sum_{l=1}^{k} \frac{\left|\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}-\boldsymbol{\theta}\right)\right|^{2}}{\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1} \boldsymbol{e}_{j}} \\
& \leq\left(\bar{b}_{k, f^{(j-1)}}(x)\right)^{2} \sum_{l=1}^{k} \frac{1}{\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1} \boldsymbol{e}_{j}} \\
& \leq \frac{\left(\bar{b}_{k, f^{(j-1)}}(x)\right)^{2}}{\boldsymbol{e}_{j}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{e}_{j}} \sum_{l=1}^{k} u_{0}^{-(k-l)} \\
& \leq \frac{\left(\bar{b}_{k, f^{(j-1)}}(x)\right)^{2}(1+\delta)}{\sigma_{k}^{2}(x)\left(1-u_{0}^{-1}\right)}
\end{aligned}
$$

By (5.18) with $d(n)=1$ the choice of $k=k^{\star}(j)$ implies $\left(\bar{b}_{k, f^{(j-1)}}(x)\right)^{2} \leq C_{j}^{2}(w) \sigma_{k}^{2}(x)$. Thus

$$
b_{j}(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j, d i a g}^{-1} b_{j}(k) \leq(1+\delta) C_{j}^{2}(w)\left(1-u_{0}^{-1}\right)^{-1}
$$

and

$$
\Delta_{j}(k)=b_{j}(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, j}^{-1} b_{j}(k) \leq s_{j} C_{j}^{2}(w)(1+\delta)\left(1-u_{0}^{-1}\right)^{-1}
$$

Now we will show that the "oracle" risk bound from Corollary 2.4.16 delivers at least the suboptimal (5.17) rate of convergence for the upper bound of the risk w.r.t. the polynomial loss function and over a Hölder class $\Sigma(\beta, L)$. For simplicity we restrict ourselves to the case of the univariate design. We study the quality of the $L P^{a d}(p-1)$ estimator $\widehat{f}(x)$ of $f(x)$ under the assumption that $f \in \Sigma(\beta, L)$ on $[0,1]$ with $\lfloor\beta\rfloor=p-1$.

Denote by $k^{\star}$ the index $k^{\star}(j)$ with $j=1$ from Theorem 2.5.3 and the corresponding bandwidth $h_{k^{\star}}$ by $h^{\star}$. Then the following asymptotic result holds:

Theorem 2.5.4. Assume $(\mathfrak{B}),(\mathfrak{D}),(\mathfrak{L o c}),(P C),(\mathfrak{S}),(\mathfrak{S} \mathfrak{l}),\left(\mathfrak{S} k^{\star} 1\right),\left(\mathfrak{L p ı}{ }^{\prime}\right)$ $\left(\mathfrak{L p} 4^{\prime}\right),(\mathcal{W})$, and that the smallest bandwidth fulfills $h_{1} \geq \frac{1}{2 n}$ and is such that the first estimator $\widetilde{f}_{1}(x)=\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{1}(x)$ is always accepted by the adaptive procedure. Let the weights $\left\{w_{k, i}(x)\right\}_{k=1}^{K}$ satisfy (6.3). Assume that for $x \in(0,1)$ there exists $\boldsymbol{\theta}(x) \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$ such that $f(x)=\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}(x)$. Let $f \in \Sigma(\beta, L)$ on $[0,1]$ with $p-1=\lfloor\beta\rfloor$. Then for the risk of the adaptive $L P^{a d}(p-1)$ estimator $\widehat{f}(x)$ of the function $f(x)$ at the point $x \in(0,1)$ the following upper bound holds:

$$
\mathbb{E}|f(x)-\widehat{f}(x)|^{r} \leq C L^{\frac{r}{2 \beta+1}}\left(\frac{\log ^{\gamma} n}{n}\right)^{\frac{r \beta}{2 \beta+1}}(1+o(1)), n \rightarrow \infty
$$

with $\gamma=\frac{2 \beta+1}{2 \beta}$ and the constant $C$ depending on $\beta, \sigma_{\min }^{2}, \sigma_{\max }^{2}, p, w_{\max }, \lambda_{0}$ and $a_{0}$ only.

Proof. By the triangle inequality and the inequality $(a+b)^{r} \leq C_{r}\left(a^{r}+b^{r}\right)$ with $C_{r}=2^{r-1}, r \geq 1$ and $C_{r}=1$ for $r \in(0,1)$, for any $k=1, \ldots, K$ we have

$$
|f(x)-\widehat{f}(x)|^{r} \leq C_{r}\left[\left|f(x)-\widetilde{f}_{k}(x)\right|^{r}+\left|\widetilde{f}_{k}(x)-\widehat{f}(x)\right|^{r}\right] .
$$

Let $\boldsymbol{\theta}(x) \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$ be such that $f(x)=\boldsymbol{e}_{1}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\theta}(x)$. Then, because $\alpha \in(0,1]$, by Theorem 2.4.8 and Corollaries 2.4.13 and 2.4.16 we have
$\left(\frac{n h^{\star} \lambda_{0}}{\sigma_{\text {max }}^{2}}\right)^{\frac{r}{2}} \mathbb{E}|f(x)-\widehat{f}(x)|^{r} \leq C_{r}\left[{\underset{\mathfrak{z}}{k^{\star}}}_{r / 2}+2\left(\mathbb{E}\left|\chi_{p}^{2}\right|^{r}\right)^{1 / 2}\left(\frac{1+\delta}{(1-\delta)^{3}}\right)^{\frac{p k^{\star}}{4}} \exp \left\{\frac{\varphi(\delta) \Delta_{1}}{2(1-\delta)}\right\}\right]$.
By Theorem 2.4.7] $\mathfrak{z}_{k^{\star}}$ is not larger in order than $K \asymp \log n$. Then for $\delta=o\left(\frac{1}{K}\right)=$ $o\left(\frac{1}{\log n}\right)$

$$
\mathbb{E}|f(x)-\widehat{f}(x)|^{r} \leq C\left(\frac{\log n}{n h^{\star}}\right)^{r / 2}(1+o(1)), n \rightarrow \infty
$$

The precise constant can be extracted easily, but because we anyway will get only a suboptimal upper bound, in the following we will not care about the constants. The balance equation (5.18) with $j=1$ and $d(n)=\mathcal{O}(1)$ and the bounds for the bias and variance from Theorem 2.5.2 suggest the choice of bandwidths in the form:

$$
h^{\star} \geq C\left(L^{2} n\right)^{-\frac{1}{2 \beta+1}}
$$

leading to the following bound for the risk:

$$
\mathbb{E}|f(x)-\widehat{f}(x)|^{r} \leq C L^{\frac{r}{2 \beta+1}}\left(\frac{(\log n)^{\frac{2 \beta+1}{2 \beta}}}{n}\right)^{\frac{r \beta}{2 \beta+1}}(1+o(1))
$$

### 2.6 Auxiliary results

## Lemma 2.6.1. Pivotality property

Let $(\mathcal{W})$ hold. Under $H_{\kappa}$ for any $k \leq \kappa$ the risk associated with the adaptive estimator at every step of the procedure does not depend on the parameter $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ :

$$
\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)\right|^{r}=\mathbb{E}_{0}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)\right|^{r},
$$

where $\mathbb{E}_{0}$ denotes the expectation w.r.t. the centered measure $\mathcal{N}(0, \Sigma)$ or $\mathcal{N}\left(0, \Sigma_{0}\right)$.

Proof. After the first $k$ steps $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}$ coincides with one of $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m}, m \leq k$, and this event takes place if for some $l \leq m$ the statistic $T_{l, m+1}>\mathfrak{z}_{l}$. Because the hypothesis $H_{\kappa}$ implies $H_{m+1}$ for all $m<\kappa$ and in view of the decomposition (2.7) it holds

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\{T_{l, m+1}>\mathfrak{z}_{l} \text { for some } l=1, \ldots, m \mid H_{m+1}\right\} \\
= & \left\{\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{l}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1}\right)>\mathfrak{z}_{l} \text { for some } l=1, \ldots, m \mid H_{m+1}\right\} \\
= & \left\{\left\|\mathbf{B}_{l}^{1 / 2}\left(\mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{l} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\varepsilon}-\mathbf{B}_{m+1}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{m+1} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\varepsilon}\right)\right\|^{2}>\mathfrak{z}_{l}, l \leq m\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

with $\boldsymbol{\varepsilon} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(0, I_{n}\right)$. The probability of this event does not depend on the shift $\boldsymbol{\theta}$, so without loss of generality $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ can be taken equal to zero. The risk associated with the estimator $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}$ admits the following decomposition:

$$
\mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}\right)\right|^{r}=\sum_{m=1}^{k-1} \mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\left|\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m}\right)\right|^{r} \mathbb{I}\left\{\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}=\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m}\right\} .
$$

Under $H_{k}$ for all $m<k$ the joint distribution of $\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m}\right)^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{k}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k}-\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m}\right)$ does not depend on $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ by the same argumentation.

Lemma 2.6.2. The matrices $J_{k} \otimes \Sigma$ and $J_{k} \otimes \Sigma_{0}$ are positive semidefinite for any $k=2, \ldots, K$.

Moreover, under the condition (S) with the same $\delta$ the following relation similar to ( $\mathfrak{S}$ ) holds for the covariance matrices $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}$ and $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}$ of the linear estimators:

$$
(1-\delta) \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k} \preceq \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0} \preceq(1+\delta) \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}, \quad k \leq K .
$$

Proof. Symmetry of $J_{k}$ and $\Sigma$, (respectively, $\Sigma_{0}$ ) implies symmetry of $J_{k} \otimes \Sigma$, (respectively, $J_{k} \otimes \Sigma_{0}$ ). Notice that any vector $\gamma_{n k} \in \mathbb{R}^{n k}$ can be represented as a partitioned vector $\gamma_{n k}^{\top}=\left(\left(\gamma_{n k}^{(1)}\right)^{\top},\left(\gamma_{n k}^{(2)}\right)^{\top}, \ldots,\left(\gamma_{n k}^{(k)}\right)^{\top}\right)$, with $\gamma_{n k}^{(l)} \in \mathbb{R}^{n}, l=1, \ldots, k$.

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma_{n k}^{\top}\left(J_{k} \otimes \Sigma\right) \gamma_{n k}=\left(\sum_{l=1}^{k} \gamma_{n k}^{(l)}\right)^{\top} \Sigma\left(\sum_{l=1}^{k} \gamma_{n k}^{(l)}\right)=\widetilde{\gamma}_{n}^{\top} \Sigma \widetilde{\gamma}_{n} \tag{6.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\widetilde{\gamma}_{n} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \sum_{l=1}^{k} \gamma_{n k}^{(l)} \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$. Because $\Sigma \succ 0$, this implies $\widetilde{\gamma}_{n}^{\top} \Sigma \widetilde{\gamma}_{n}>0$ for all $\widetilde{\gamma}_{n} \neq 0$. But even for $\gamma_{n k} \neq 0$, if its subvectors $\left\{\gamma_{n l}^{(l)}\right\}$ are linearly dependent, $\widetilde{\gamma}_{n}$ can be zero. Thus there exists a nonzero vector $\gamma$ such that $\gamma^{\top}\left(J_{k} \otimes \Sigma\right) \gamma=0$. This means positive semidefiniteness.

The second assertion follows from the observation that the condition (S) due to the equality (6.1) also holds for the Kronecker product

$$
\begin{equation*}
(1-\delta) J_{k} \otimes \Sigma \preceq J_{k} \otimes \Sigma_{0} \preceq(1+\delta) J_{k} \otimes \Sigma . \tag{6.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore

$$
(1-\delta) \mathbf{D}_{k}\left(J_{k} \otimes \Sigma\right) \mathbf{D}_{k}^{\top} \preceq \mathbf{D}_{k}\left(J_{k} \otimes \Sigma_{0}\right) \mathbf{D}_{k}^{\top} \preceq(1+\delta) \mathbf{D}_{k}\left(J_{k} \otimes \Sigma\right) \mathbf{D}_{k}^{\top} .
$$

Lemma 2.6.3. Suppose that the weights $\left\{w_{l, i}(x)\right\}$ for every fixed $x \in \mathbb{R}^{d}$ satisfy

$$
\begin{equation*}
w_{l, i}(x) w_{m, i}(x)=w_{l, i}(x), \quad l \leq m . \tag{6.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then under the conditions $(\mathfrak{D}),(\mathfrak{L o c}),(\mathfrak{B})$ the covariance matrix $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}$ defined by (4.17) is nonsingular with

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}=\operatorname{det} \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \prod_{l=2}^{k} \operatorname{det}\left(\mathbf{B}_{l-1}^{-1}-\mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1}\right)>0, \quad k=2, \ldots, K \tag{6.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Remark 2.6.1. The condition (6.3) holds for rectangular kernels with nested supports.

Proof. The condition (6.3) implies $\mathbf{W}_{l} \Sigma \mathbf{W}_{m}=\operatorname{diag}\left(w_{l, 1} w_{m, 1} \sigma_{1}^{-2}, \ldots, w_{l, n} w_{m, n} \sigma_{n}^{-2}\right)=$ $\mathbf{W}_{l}$ for any $l \leq m$. Thus, the blocks of $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}$ simplify to $D_{l} \Sigma D_{m}^{\top}=\mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1} \mathbf{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{l} \Sigma \mathbf{W}_{m} \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{m}^{-1}=$ $\mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{l} \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{m}^{-1}$, and $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}$ has a simple structure:

$$
\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}=\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
\mathbf{B}_{1}^{-1} & \mathbf{B}_{2}^{-1} & \mathbf{B}_{3}^{-1} & \ldots & \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \\
\mathbf{B}_{2}^{-1} & \mathbf{B}_{2}^{-1} & \mathbf{B}_{3}^{-1} & \ldots & \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \\
\vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots \\
\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} & \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} & \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} & \ldots & \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1}
\end{array}\right)
$$

Then the determinant of $\Sigma_{k}$ coincides with the determinant of the following irreducible block triangular matrix:

$$
\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}=\left|\begin{array}{ccccc}
\mathbf{B}_{1}^{-1}-\mathbf{B}_{2}^{-1} & \mathbf{B}_{2}^{-1}-\mathbf{B}_{3}^{-1} & \ldots & \mathbf{B}_{k-1}^{-1}-\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} & \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \\
\mathbf{0} & \mathbf{B}_{2}^{-1}-\mathbf{B}_{3}^{-1} & \ldots & \mathbf{B}_{k-1}^{-1}-\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} & \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \\
\vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots \\
\mathbf{0} & \mathbf{0} & \ldots & \mathbf{B}_{k-1}^{-1}-\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} & \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} \\
\mathbf{0} & \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1}
\end{array}\right|
$$

implying

$$
\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}=\operatorname{det}\left(\mathbf{B}_{1}^{-1}-\mathbf{B}_{2}^{-1}\right) \operatorname{det}\left(\mathbf{B}_{2}^{-1}-\mathbf{B}_{3}^{-1}\right) \cdot \ldots \cdot \operatorname{det}\left(\mathbf{B}_{k-1}^{-1}-\mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1}\right) \operatorname{det} \mathbf{B}_{k}^{-1} .
$$

Clearly the matrix $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}$ is nonsingular if all the matrices $\mathbf{B}_{l-1}^{-1}-\mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1}$ are nonsingular. By $(\mathfrak{D})$ and $(\mathfrak{L o c}) \mathbf{B}_{l} \succ 0$ for any $l$. By $(\mathfrak{B})$ there exists $u_{0}>1$ such that $\mathbf{B}_{l} \succeq u_{0} \mathbf{B}_{l-1}$ therefore $\mathbf{B}_{l-1}^{-1}-\mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1} \succeq\left(1-1 / u_{0}\right) \mathbf{B}_{l-1}^{-1} \succ \mathbf{B}_{l-1}^{-1} \succ 0$.

Lemma 2.6.4. Under the alternative the moment generation function (mgf) of the joint distribution of $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{1}, \ldots, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{K}$ is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{E} \exp \left\{\gamma^{\top}\left(\operatorname{vec} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{K}-\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{K}^{*}\right)\right\}=\exp \left\{\frac{1}{2} \gamma^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{K, 0} \gamma\right\} \tag{6.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, provided that $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{K, 0} \succ 0$, it holds $\operatorname{vec} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{K} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{K}^{*}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{K, 0}\right)$.
Similarly, under the null, if $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{K} \succ 0$, the joint distribution of $\operatorname{vec} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{K}$ is $\mathcal{N}\left(\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{K}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{K}\right)$ with mgf

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{E} \exp \left\{\gamma^{\top}\left(\operatorname{vec} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{K}-\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{K}\right)\right\}=\exp \left\{\frac{1}{2} \gamma^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{K} \gamma\right\} \tag{6.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Let $\gamma \in \mathbb{R}^{p K}$ be written in a partitioned form $\gamma^{\top}=\left(\gamma_{1}^{\top}, \ldots, \gamma_{K}^{\top}\right)$ with subvectors $\gamma_{l} \in \mathbb{R}^{p}, l=1, \ldots, K$. Then the mgf for the centered random vector $\operatorname{vec} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{K}-\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{K}^{*} \in \mathbb{R}^{p K}$ due to the decomposition (2.7) $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}=\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}+D_{l} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\varepsilon}$ with $D_{l}=\mathbf{B}_{l}^{-1} \mathbf{\Psi} \mathbf{W}_{l}$ can be represented as follows:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbb{E} \exp \left\{\gamma^{\top}\left(\operatorname{vec} \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{K}-\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{K}^{*}\right)\right\}=\mathbb{E} \exp \left\{\sum_{l=1}^{K} \gamma_{l}^{\top}\left(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{l}-\boldsymbol{\theta}_{l}^{*}\right)\right\} \\
= & \mathbb{E} \exp \left\{\sum_{l=1}^{K} \gamma_{l}^{\top} D_{l} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \varepsilon\right\}=\mathbb{E} \exp \left\{\left(\sum_{l=1}^{K} D_{l}^{\top} \gamma_{l}\right)^{\top} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \varepsilon\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

A trivial observation that $\sum_{l=1}^{K} D_{l}^{\top} \gamma_{l}$ is a vector in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ and $\Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \varepsilon \sim \mathcal{N}\left(0, \Sigma_{0}\right)$ by (1.1) implies by definition of $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{K, 0}$ the first assertion of the lemma, because

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbb{E} \exp \left\{\left(\sum_{l=1}^{K} D_{l}^{\top} \gamma_{l}\right)^{\top} \Sigma_{0}^{1 / 2} \varepsilon\right\}=\exp \left\{\frac{1}{2}\left(\sum_{l=1}^{K} D_{l}^{\top} \gamma_{l}\right)^{\top} \Sigma_{0}\left(\sum_{l=1}^{K} D_{l}^{\top} \gamma_{l}\right)\right\} \\
= & \exp \left\{\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathbf{D}_{K}^{\top} \gamma\right)^{\top}\left(J_{K} \otimes \Sigma_{0}\right) \mathbf{D}_{K}^{\top} \gamma\right\}=\exp \left\{\frac{1}{2} \gamma^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{K, 0} \gamma\right\},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\mathbf{D}_{K}$ is defined by (4.39).

Lemma 2.6.5. The Kullback-Leibler divergence between the distributions of vec $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}_{k}$ under the alternative and under the null has the following form:

$$
\begin{align*}
& 2 \mathbb{K} \mathbb{L}\left(\mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}^{k}, \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}^{k}\right) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} 2 \mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}} \log \left(\frac{\mathrm{~d} \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}^{k}}{\mathrm{~d} \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}^{k}}\right) \\
= & \Delta(k)+\log \left(\frac{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}}{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}}\right)+\operatorname{tr}\left(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}\right)-p k \tag{6.7}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
b(k) & \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}^{*}-\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k},  \tag{6.8}\\
\Delta(k) & \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} b(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{-1} b(k) . \tag{6.9}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. Denote the Radon-Nikodym derivative by $Z_{k} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \mathrm{d} \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}^{k} / \mathrm{d} \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}^{k}$. Then

$$
\begin{align*}
\log \left(Z_{k}(y)\right)=\frac{1}{2} \log \left(\frac{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}}{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}}\right) & -\frac{1}{2}\left\|\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1 / 2}\left(y-\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}^{*}\right)\right\|^{2} \\
& +\frac{1}{2}\left\|\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{-1 / 2}\left(y-\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}\right)\right\|^{2} \tag{6.10}
\end{align*}
$$

can be considered as a quadratic function of $\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}$. By the Taylor expansion at the point $\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}^{*}$ the last expression reads as follows:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \log \left(Z_{k}(y)\right)=\frac{1}{2} \log \left(\frac{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}}{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}}\right)-\frac{1}{2}\left\|\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{-1 / 2}\left(y-\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}^{*}\right)\right\|^{2} \\
+ & \frac{1}{2}\left\|\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{-1 / 2}\left(y-\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}^{*}\right)\right\|^{2}+b(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{-1}\left(y-\operatorname{vec} \boldsymbol{\Theta}_{k}^{*}\right)+\frac{1}{2} \Delta(k) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then the expression for the Kullback-Leibler divergence can be written in the following way:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbb{K} \mathbb{L}\left(\mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}^{k}, \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}^{k}\right) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \mathbb{E}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}} \log \left(Z_{k}\right) \\
= & \frac{1}{2} \log \left(\frac{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}}{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}}\right)+\frac{1}{2} \Delta(k)+\frac{1}{2} \mathbb{E}\left\{\left\|\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{-1 / 2} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{1 / 2} \xi\right\|^{2}-\|\xi\|^{2}+2 b(k)^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}^{1 / 2} \xi\right\},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\xi \sim \mathcal{N}\left(0, I_{p k}\right)$. This implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 \mathbb{K} \mathbb{L}\left(\mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}^{k}, \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}^{k}\right)=\Delta(k)+\log \left(\frac{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}}{\operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}}\right)+\operatorname{tr}\left(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}\right)-p k . \tag{6.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

In the case of homogeneous errors with $\sigma_{0, i}=\sigma_{0}$ and $\sigma_{i}=\sigma, i=1, \ldots, n$, the calculations simplify a lot. Now

$$
\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k}=\sigma^{2} \mathbf{V}_{k}, \quad \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}=\sigma_{0}^{2} \mathbf{V}_{k}
$$

with a $p k \times p k$ matrix $\mathbf{V}_{k}$ defined as

$$
\mathbf{V}_{k}=\left(\bar{D}_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus \bar{D}_{k}\right)\left(J_{k} \otimes I_{n}\right)\left(\bar{D}_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus \bar{D}_{k}\right)^{\top}
$$

where $\bar{D}_{l}=\left(\boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathcal{W}_{l} \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{\top}\right)^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \mathcal{W}_{l}, l=1, \ldots, k$, does not depend on $\sigma$. Then $\Delta(k)=$ $\sigma^{-2} \Delta_{1}(k)$, with $\Delta_{1}(k) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} b(k)^{\top} \mathbf{V}_{k}^{-1} b(k), \operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k} / \operatorname{det} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{k, 0}=\left(\sigma^{2} / \sigma_{0}^{2}\right)^{p k}$ and the expression for the Kullback-Leibler divergence reads as follows:

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathbb{K} \mathbb{L}\left(\mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{f}, \Sigma_{0}}^{k}, \mathbb{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma}^{k}\right) & =p k \log \left(\frac{\sigma}{\sigma_{0}}\right)+\frac{1}{2} \Delta(k)+\frac{p k}{2}\left(\frac{\sigma_{0}^{2}}{\sigma^{2}}-1\right) \\
& =p k \log \left(\frac{\sigma}{\sigma_{0}}\right)+\frac{1}{2 \sigma^{2}} b(k)^{\top} \mathbf{V}_{k}^{-1} b(k)+\frac{p k}{2}\left(\frac{\sigma_{0}^{2}}{\sigma^{2}}-1\right), \tag{6.12}
\end{align*}
$$

implying the same asymptotic behavior as in (4.25).

## Chapter 3

## Dependence on the dimension for complexity of approximation of random fields

In this chapter we consider the $\varepsilon$-approximation by $n$-term partial sums of the Karhunen-Loève expansion of $d$-parametric random fields of tensor product-type in the average case setting. We investigate the behavior as $d \rightarrow \infty$ of the information complexity $n(\varepsilon, d)$ of approximation with error not exceeding a given level $\varepsilon$. It was recently shown by Lifshits and Tulyakova [44] that for this problem one observes the curse of dimensionality (intractability) phenomenon. We present the exact asymptotic expression for the information complexity $n(\varepsilon, d)$.

### 3.1 Introduction and set-up

Suppose we have a random function $X(t)$, with $t$ in a compact parameter set $T$, admitting a series representation via random variables $\xi_{k}$ and the deterministic real functions $\varphi_{k}$, namely,

$$
X(t)=\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \xi_{k} \varphi_{k}(t)
$$

where the series converges in the mean and a.s. for each $t \in T$. A more precise description will be given later. For any finite set of positive integers $K \subset \mathbb{N}$ let $X_{K}(t)=\sum_{k \in K} \xi_{k} \varphi_{k}(t)$. In many problems one needs to approximate $X$, for instance under the $L_{2}$-norm with a finite-rank process $X_{K}$. Natural questions arise: How large should $K$ be in order to yield a given small approximation error? Given the size of $K$, which $K$ provides the smallest error?

In this chapter we address the first of these questions for a specific class of random functions, namely tensor product-type random fields with high-dimensional parameter sets. The tensor product-type field is a separable zero-mean random function $X=$ $\{X(t)\}_{t \in T}$, with a rectangular parameter set $T \subset \mathbb{R}^{d}$ and covariance function $\mathcal{K}^{(d)}$ which can be decomposed into a product of equal "marginal" covariances depending on different arguments. Namely, let $T=[0,1]^{d}$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{K}^{(d)}(s, t)=\prod_{l=1}^{d} \mathcal{K}_{l}\left(s_{l}, t_{l}\right) \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $s_{l}, t_{l} \in[0,1], s=\left(s_{1}, \ldots, s_{d}\right), t=\left(t_{1}, \ldots, t_{d}\right)$. Obviously, the integral operator with the kernel (1.1) is the tensor product of the integral operators with the kernels $\mathcal{K}_{l}\left(s_{l}, t_{l}\right)$.

Let $\left\{\lambda_{i}\right\}_{i \geq 1}$ be a nonnegative sequence satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \lambda_{i}^{2}<\infty \tag{1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and let $\left\{\varphi_{i}\right\}_{i>0}$ be an orthonormal basis in $L_{2}[0,1]$. Consider a family of tensor product-type random fields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{X}=\left\{X^{(d)}(t), t \in[0,1]^{d}\right\}, \quad d=1,2, \ldots \tag{1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

According to the multiparametric Karhunen-Loève expansion (see [1] for details), the family (1.3) can be given by

$$
\begin{align*}
X^{(d)}(t) & =\sum_{\mathbf{k} \in \mathbb{N}^{d}} \xi_{\mathbf{k}} \prod_{l=1}^{d} \lambda_{k_{l}} \prod_{l=1}^{d} \varphi_{k_{l}}\left(t_{l}\right)  \tag{1.4}\\
& =\sum_{k_{1}=1}^{\infty} \cdots \sum_{k_{d}=1}^{\infty} \xi_{k_{1}, \ldots, k_{d}} \lambda_{k_{1}} \cdots \lambda_{k_{d}} \varphi_{k_{1}}\left(t_{1}\right) \cdots \varphi_{k_{d}}\left(t_{d}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

where the series converges a.s. for every $t=\left(t_{1}, \ldots, t_{d}\right) \in[0,1]^{d}$. The collection $\left\{\xi_{\mathbf{k}}\right\}$ is an array of noncorrelated random variables with zero mean and unit variance, and $\lambda_{k_{l}}^{2}$ and $\varphi_{k_{l}}$ are, respectively, the eigenvalues and eigenfunctions of the family of integral equations

$$
\lambda_{k_{l}}^{2} \varphi_{k_{l}}\left(t_{l}\right)=\int_{0}^{1} \mathcal{K}_{l}\left(s_{l}, t_{l}\right) \varphi_{k_{l}}\left(s_{l}\right) \mathrm{d} s_{l}, \quad t_{l} \in[0,1], \quad l=1, \ldots, d
$$

corresponding to the "marginal" covariance operators. Clearly, under assumption (1.2) the sample paths of $X^{(d)}$ belong to $L_{2}\left([0,1]^{d}\right)$ almost surely and the covariance operator of $X^{(d)}$ has the system of eigenvalues

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda_{\mathbf{k}}^{2}=\prod_{l=1}^{d} \lambda_{k_{l}}^{2}, \quad \mathbf{k} \in \mathbb{N}^{d} \tag{1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

As was mentioned in [60], the Karhunen-Loève expansion or the proper orthogonal decomposition of random functions was introduced independently and almost
simultaneously by Kosambi [35], Loève [46], Karhunen [27], [28], Obukhov [50], and Pougachev [56].

In what follows we suppress the index $d$ and write $X(t)$ instead of $X^{(d)}(t)$. For any $n>0$, let $X_{n}$ be the partial sum of (1.4) corresponding to $n$ maximal eigenvalues. We study the average case error of approximation to $X$ by $X_{n}$

$$
e\left(X, X_{n} ; d\right)=\left(\mathbb{E}\left\|X-X_{n}\right\|_{2}^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}
$$

as $d \rightarrow \infty$.
It is well known (see, for example, [9], [36] or [59]) that $X_{n}$ provides the minimal average quadratic error among all linear approximations to $X$ having rank $n$. Because we are going to explore a family of random functions, it is more natural to investigate relative errors, that is, to compare the error size with the size of the function itself. Denote the "marginal" trace by

$$
\Lambda \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \lambda_{i}^{2}
$$

Then

$$
\mathbb{E}\|X\|_{2}^{2}=\sum_{\mathbf{k} \in \mathbb{N}^{d}} \lambda_{\mathbf{k}}^{2}=\Lambda^{d}
$$

The average case information complexity for the normalized error criterion reads as the minimal number of terms in $X_{n}$ (or, equivalently, of maximal eigenvalues, if they would be ordered) needed to approximate $X$ with the error not exceeding a given level $\varepsilon$ :

$$
n(\varepsilon, d) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \min \left\{n: \frac{e\left(X, X_{n} ; d\right)}{\left(\mathbb{E}\|X\|_{2}^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}} \leq \varepsilon\right\}=\min \left\{n: \mathbb{E}\left\|X-X_{n}\right\|_{2}^{2} \leq \varepsilon^{2} \Lambda^{d}\right\}
$$

The study of $n(\varepsilon, d)$ we are interested in here belongs to the class of problems dealing with the dependence of the information complexity for linear multivariate
problems on the dimension, see the papers of Woźniakovski [76], [77], [78], [79] and the references therein.

Generally, the linear tensor problems with $\lambda_{2}>0$ for the normalized error criterion are intractable, since

$$
n(\varepsilon, d) \geq\left(1-\varepsilon^{2}\right)\left(1+\frac{\lambda_{2}}{\lambda_{1}}\right)^{d} \text { for all } \varepsilon \in[0,1)
$$

is exponential in $d$ and the curse of dimensionality takes place, see Theorem 6.6 of [49]. However, it is interesting to know the exact behavior of the information complexity $n(\varepsilon, d)$ even in this case, because this kind of negative result can help in lifting the curse of dimensionality.

It was suggested in [44] to use an auxiliary probabilistic construction for studying the properties of the deterministic array of eigenvalues (1.5). We follow this approach.

Consider a sequence of independent identically distributed random variables $\left\{U_{l}\right\}, l=$ $1,2, \ldots$ with the common distribution given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{P}\left(U_{l}=-\log \lambda_{i}\right)=\frac{\lambda_{i}^{2}}{\Lambda}, \quad i=1,2, \ldots \tag{1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Under the assumption

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i=1}^{\infty}\left|\log \lambda_{i}\right|^{3} \lambda_{i}^{2}<\infty \tag{1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

the condition $\mathbb{E}\left|U_{l}\right|^{3}<\infty$ is obviously satisfied.
Let $M$ and $\sigma^{2}$ denote, respectively, the mean and the variance of $U_{l}$. Clearly,

$$
\begin{aligned}
M & =-\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \log \lambda_{i} \frac{\lambda_{i}^{2}}{\Lambda} \\
\sigma^{2} & =\sum_{i=1}^{\infty}\left|\log \lambda_{i}\right|^{2} \frac{\lambda_{i}^{2}}{\Lambda}-M^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Then the third central moment of $U_{l}$ is given by

$$
\alpha^{3} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \mathbb{E}\left(U_{l}-M\right)^{3}=-\sum_{i=1}^{\infty}\left(\log \lambda_{i}\right)^{3} \frac{\lambda_{i}^{2}}{\Lambda}-3 M \sigma^{2}-M^{3} .
$$

If (1.7) is verified, we have $|M|<\infty, 0 \leq \sigma^{2}<\infty$, and $|\alpha|<\infty$.
In what follows the explosion coefficient

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{E} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \Lambda e^{2 M} \tag{1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

will play a significant role, because its contribution into the "curse of dimensionality" is the largest. It was shown in [44] that by concavity of the logarithmic function $\mathcal{E}>1$, except for the totally degenerate case when the number of strictly positive eigenvalues is zero or one. In other words, $\mathcal{E}=1$ if and only if $\sigma=0$. Henceforth, we will exclude this degenerate case.

The following result was obtained in [44], Theorem 3.2.

Theorem 3.1.1. Assume that the sequence $\left\{\lambda_{i}\right\}, i=1,2, \ldots$, satisfies the condition

$$
\sum_{i=1}^{\infty}\left|\log \lambda_{i}\right|^{2} \lambda_{i}^{2}<\infty
$$

Then for every $\varepsilon \in(0,1)$ we have

$$
\lim _{d \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\log n(\varepsilon, d)-d \log \mathcal{E}}{\sqrt{d}}=2 q
$$

where the quantile $q=q(\varepsilon)$ is chosen from the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
1-\Phi\left(\frac{q}{\sigma}\right)=\varepsilon^{2} \tag{1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\Phi(\cdot)$ denoting the standard normal distribution function.

The authors of [44] conjectured that under further assumptions on the sequence $\left\{\lambda_{i}\right\}$ one can prove that

$$
n(\varepsilon, d) \approx \frac{C(\varepsilon) \mathcal{E}^{d} e^{2 q \sqrt{d}}}{\sqrt{d}}, \quad d \rightarrow \infty .
$$

We will show that even a stronger statement holds.

### 3.2 Main result: the exact intractability rate in increasing dimension

It turns out that two different cases depending on the nature of the distribution of $U_{l}$ should be distinguished. The proof and the final result depend on whether this distribution is a lattice distribution or not.

Recall that one calls a discrete distribution of a random variable $U$ a lattice distribution, if there exist numbers $a$ and $h>0$ such that every possible value of $U$ can be represented in the form $a+\nu h$, where $\nu$ is an integer. The number $h$ is called the span of the distribution. In the following, when studying the lattice case, we assume that $h$ is the maximal span of the distribution; i.e., one cannot represent all possible values of $U_{l}$ in the form $b+\nu h_{1}$ for some $b$ and $h_{1}>h$.

Definition (1.6) yields that the variables $U_{l}$ have a common lattice distribution if and only if $\lambda_{i}=C e^{-n_{i} h}$ for some positive $C, h$ and $n_{i} \in \mathbb{N}$. We call this situation the lattice case and will assume that $h$ is chosen as large as possible. Otherwise we say that the nonlattice case holds.

By $f(d)=o(g(d))$ we mean that $\lim _{d \rightarrow \infty} \frac{f(d)}{g(d)}=0$. In particular, $f(d)=g(d)(1+o(1))$ means that $\lim _{d \rightarrow \infty} \frac{f(d)}{g(d)}=1$.

Theorem 3.2.1. Let the sequence $\left\{\lambda_{i}\right\}, i=1,2, \ldots$, satisfy (1.7).
Then for every $\varepsilon \in(0,1)$ it holds

$$
n(\varepsilon, d)=K \phi\left(\frac{q}{\sigma}\right) \mathcal{E}^{d} e^{2 q \sqrt{d}} d^{-1 / 2}(1+o(1)), \quad d \rightarrow \infty
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
\phi(x) & =\frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi}} e^{-x^{2} / 2} \\
K & = \begin{cases}\frac{h}{\sigma\left(1-e^{-2 h}\right)} & \text { in the lattice case } \\
\frac{1}{2 \sigma} & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
\end{aligned}
$$

and the quantile $q=q(\varepsilon)$ is defined in (1.9).

Remark 3.2.1. One can see that the complexity of approximation increases exponentially as $d \rightarrow \infty$. This phenomenon is referred to as the curse of dimensionality or intractability; see, e.g., 59] and [77]. The notion of the "curse of dimensionality" dates back at least to Bellman [5].

Remark 3.2.2. By l'Hôpital's rule,

$$
\lim _{h \rightarrow 0} \frac{h}{\sigma\left(1-e^{-2 h}\right)}=\frac{1}{2 \sigma},
$$

and thus the relations for $K$ are in accordance as $h \rightarrow 0$.

### 3.3 Proof of the main result

This section presents a proof of Theorem 3.2.1.

Proof. Let $\zeta=\zeta(\varepsilon, d)$ be the maximal positive number such that the sum of eigenvalues satisfies

$$
\sum_{\mathbf{k} \in \mathbb{N}^{d}: \lambda_{\mathbf{k}}<\zeta} \lambda_{\mathbf{k}}^{2} \leq \varepsilon^{2} \Lambda^{d}
$$

Define a lattice set in $\mathbb{N}^{d}$ in the following way:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathrm{A}=\mathrm{A}(\varepsilon, d) & \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left\{\mathbf{k} \in \mathbb{N}^{d}: \lambda_{\mathbf{k}} \geq \zeta\right\} \\
& =\left\{\mathbf{k} \in \mathbb{N}^{d}: \prod_{l=1}^{d} \lambda_{k_{l}} \geq \zeta\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $\lambda_{\mathbf{k}}>0$ for any $\mathbf{k} \in A$, one can write

$$
\begin{aligned}
& n(\varepsilon, d)=\# \mathrm{~A}=\sum_{\mathbf{k} \in \mathrm{A}} \frac{\lambda_{\mathbf{k}}^{2}}{\lambda_{\mathbf{k}}^{2}} \\
= & \sum_{\mathbf{k} \in \mathbb{N}^{d}:-\sum \log \lambda_{k_{l}} \leq-\log \zeta} \Lambda^{d} \exp \left\{-2 \sum_{l=1}^{d} \log \lambda_{k_{l}}\right\} \prod_{l=1}^{d} \mathbb{P}\left(U_{l}=-\log \lambda_{k_{l}}\right) \\
= & \Lambda^{d} \mathbb{E} \exp \left\{2 \sum_{l=1}^{d} U_{l}\right\} \mathbb{I}\left\{\sum_{l=1}^{d} U_{l} \leq-\log \zeta\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

For centered and normalized sums

$$
Z_{d}=\frac{\sum_{l=1}^{d} U_{l}-d M}{\sigma \sqrt{d}}
$$

we have

$$
\left\{\sum_{l=1}^{d} U_{l} \leq-\log \zeta\right\}=\left\{Z_{d} \leq \theta\right\}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta=\theta(\varepsilon, d)=-\frac{\log \zeta+d M}{\sigma \sqrt{d}} \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

We show now that $\theta$ has a useful probabilistic meaning in terms of $\left\{U_{l}\right\}$ and of
their sums. Applying Lemma 3.1 of [44] we have for any $d \in \mathbb{N}$ and $z \in \mathbb{R}^{1}$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{\mathbf{k} \in \mathbb{N}^{d}: \lambda_{\mathbf{k}}<z} \lambda_{\mathbf{k}}^{2} & =\Lambda^{d} \mathbb{P}\left(\sum_{l=1}^{d} U_{l}>-\log z\right) \\
& =\Lambda^{d} \mathbb{P}\left(Z_{d}>-\frac{\log z+d M}{\sigma \sqrt{d}}\right) \\
& =\Lambda^{d} \mathbb{P}\left(Z_{d}>\theta_{z}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
\theta_{z}=-\frac{\log z+d M}{\sigma \sqrt{d}}
$$

Fix $\varepsilon \in(0,1)$. Observe that

$$
\sum_{\mathbf{k} \in \mathbb{N}^{d}: \lambda_{\mathbf{k}}<z} \lambda_{\mathbf{k}}^{2} \leq \varepsilon^{2} \Lambda^{d}
$$

if and only if

$$
\mathbb{P}\left(Z_{d}>\theta_{z}\right) \leq \varepsilon^{2}
$$

Therefore, $\theta=\theta(\varepsilon, d)$ defined by (3.1) is the $\left(1-\varepsilon^{2}\right)$-quantile of the distribution of $Z_{d}$, namely,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\theta(\varepsilon, d) & =\min \left\{\theta: \mathbb{P}\left(Z_{d}>\theta\right) \leq \varepsilon^{2}\right\} \\
& =\min \left\{\theta: \mathbb{P}\left(Z_{d} \leq \theta\right)>1-\varepsilon^{2}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $q=q(\varepsilon)$ be the quantile of the normal distribution function chosen from (1.9). Then in view of the central limit theorem

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta(\varepsilon, d) \rightarrow \frac{q(\varepsilon)}{\sigma}, \quad d \rightarrow \infty \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

for any fixed $\varepsilon \in(0,1)$.

Now let us return to the information complexity. We obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
n(\varepsilon, d) & =\mathcal{E}^{d} \mathbb{E} \exp \left\{2 \sigma \sqrt{d} Z_{d}\right\} \mathbb{I}\left\{Z_{d} \leq \theta\right\} \\
& =\mathcal{E}^{d} \exp \{2 \sigma \sqrt{d} \theta\} \int_{-\infty}^{\theta} \exp \{2 \sigma \sqrt{d}(z-\theta)\} \mathrm{d} F_{d}(z),
\end{aligned}
$$

where $F_{d}(z)=\mathbb{P}\left(Z_{d}<z\right)$ and $\mathcal{E}$ is defined as in (1.8).
Denote

$$
\Psi_{d}(z) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \exp \{2 \sigma \sqrt{d}(z-\theta)\}
$$

and integrate by parts the integral

$$
\int_{-\infty}^{\theta} \Psi_{d}(z) \mathrm{d}\left[F_{d}(z)-F_{d}(\theta)\right]=\int_{-\infty}^{\theta}\left[-F_{d}(z)+F_{d}(\theta)\right] \mathrm{d} \Psi_{d}(z)
$$

From now on we have to distinguish the lattice and nonlattice cases.

### 3.3.1 Nonlattice case

In the following part of the proof we will assume that the distribution of $\left\{U_{l}\right\}$ is not lattice. This is true in the most interesting cases, such as the Brownian sheet (the Wiener-Chentsov random field), the completely tucked Brownian sheet (the Brownian pillow), and the d-variate Hoeffding, Blum, Kiefer and Rosenblatt process (see Appendix 3.4 for details).

In view of (1.7) we are able to apply the Cramér-Esseen Theorem (cf. [21], section 42, Theorem 2; [54], Chap. V, section 5.7, Theorem 5.21; [53], Chap. VI,
section 3, Theorem 4). It leads to

$$
\begin{align*}
& \int_{-\infty}^{\theta}\left[-F_{d}(z)+F_{d}(\theta)\right] \mathrm{d} \Psi_{d}(z) \\
= & \int_{-\infty}^{\theta}[-\Phi(z)+\Phi(\theta)] \mathrm{d} \Psi_{d}(z)  \tag{3.3}\\
+ & \frac{\alpha^{3}}{6 \sigma^{3} \sqrt{2 \pi d}} \int_{-\infty}^{\theta}\left[\left(z^{2}-1\right) e^{-z^{2} / 2}-\left(\left(\theta^{2}-1\right) e^{-\theta^{2} / 2}\right] \mathrm{d} \Psi_{d}(z)+o\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{d}}\right)\right. \\
= & I_{1}+I_{2}-I_{3}-I_{4}+o\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{d}}\right),
\end{align*}
$$

where $\Phi(\cdot)$ is the standard normal distribution function and

$$
\begin{aligned}
I_{1} & =\int_{-\infty}^{\theta}[-\Phi(z)+\Phi(\theta)] \mathrm{d} \Psi_{d}(z), \\
I_{2} & =\frac{\alpha^{3}}{6 \sigma^{3} \sqrt{2 \pi d}} \int_{-\infty}^{\theta} z^{2} e^{-z^{2} / 2} \mathrm{~d} \Psi_{d}(z), \\
I_{3} & =\frac{\alpha^{3}}{6 \sigma^{3} \sqrt{2 \pi d}} \int_{-\infty}^{\theta} e^{-z^{2} / 2} \mathrm{~d} \Psi_{d}(z), \\
I_{4} & =\frac{\alpha^{3}}{6 \sigma^{3} \sqrt{2 \pi d}}\left(\theta^{2}-1\right) e^{-\theta^{2} / 2} \\
& =\frac{\alpha^{3}}{6 \sigma^{3} \sqrt{2 \pi d}}\left(\left(\frac{q}{\sigma}\right)^{2}-1\right) \exp \left\{-\frac{q^{2}}{2 \sigma^{2}}\right\}(1+o(1)) .
\end{aligned}
$$

(the last equivalence is provided by (3.2)).
Since $\mathrm{d} \Psi_{d}(z)=2 \sigma \sqrt{d} \Psi_{d}(z) d z$, the integral $I_{2}$ is given, after a change of variable, by the following expression:

$$
\begin{aligned}
I_{2} & =I_{2}(d, \theta) \\
& =\frac{\alpha^{3}}{3 \sigma^{2} \sqrt{2 \pi d}} \int_{0}^{\infty}\left(\theta-\frac{y}{\sqrt{d}}\right)^{2} \exp \left\{-\frac{1}{2}\left(\theta-\frac{y}{\sqrt{d}}\right)^{2}\right\} \exp \{-2 \sigma y\} \mathrm{d} y
\end{aligned}
$$

with $y=-\sqrt{d}(z-\theta)$.
For any $d=1,2, \ldots$,

$$
0 \leq\left(\theta-\frac{y}{\sqrt{d}}\right)^{2} \exp \left\{-\frac{1}{2}\left(\theta-\frac{y}{\sqrt{d}}\right)^{2}\right\} \leq(|\theta|+y)^{2}
$$

This estimate gives us the majorant required in the Lebesgue dominated convergence theorem. Using (3.2) and passing to the limit in the integral, we obtain, as $d \rightarrow \infty$,

$$
I_{2}(d, \theta)=\frac{\alpha^{3}}{6 \sigma^{3} \sqrt{2 \pi d}}\left(\frac{q}{\sigma}\right)^{2} \exp \left\{-\frac{q^{2}}{2 \sigma^{2}}\right\}(1+o(1))
$$

Similarly,

$$
I_{3}(d, \theta)=\frac{\alpha^{3}}{6 \sigma^{3} \sqrt{2 \pi d}} \exp \left\{-\frac{q^{2}}{2 \sigma^{2}}\right\}(1+o(1))
$$

Thus we obtain that $\sqrt{d} I_{4}=\sqrt{d}\left(I_{2}-I_{3}\right)(1+o(1))$, and hence, $I_{2}-I_{3}-I_{4}=o\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{d}}\right)$.

Consider the main integral $I_{1}$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
I_{1} & =I_{1}(d, \theta)=\int_{-\infty}^{\theta}[-\Phi(z)+\Phi(\theta)] \mathrm{d} \Psi_{d}(z) \\
& =\frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{\theta} \exp \{2 \sigma \sqrt{d}(z-\theta)\} \exp \left\{-z^{2} / 2\right\} \mathrm{d} z \\
& =\frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi d}} \int_{0}^{\infty} \exp \left\{-\frac{1}{2}\left(\theta-\frac{y}{\sqrt{d}}\right)^{2}\right\} \exp \{-2 \sigma y\} \mathrm{d} y \\
& =\frac{1}{2 \sigma \sqrt{2 \pi d}} \exp \left\{-\frac{q^{2}}{2 \sigma^{2}}\right\}(1+o(1)), d \rightarrow \infty \tag{3.4}
\end{align*}
$$

Then

$$
n(\varepsilon, d)=\frac{\mathcal{E}^{d} \exp \{2 q \sqrt{d}\}}{2 \sigma \sqrt{d}} \frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi}} \exp \left\{-\frac{q^{2}}{2 \sigma^{2}}\right\}(1+o(1))
$$

as asserted.

### 3.3.2 Lattice case

Now we will proceed under the assumption that the random variables $U_{l}$ have a lattice distribution. Let possible values of the random variable $U_{l}$ be $\widetilde{a}+\nu h, \nu=$
$0, \pm 1, \pm 2, \ldots$, where $\widetilde{a}=M+a$ is a shift and $h$ is the maximal span of the distribution. Therefore, all possible values of $Z_{d}$ have the form

$$
\frac{d a+\nu h}{\sigma \sqrt{d}}, \nu=0, \pm 1, \pm 2, \ldots
$$

Introduce the function

$$
S(x)=[x]-x+\frac{1}{2}
$$

where $[x]$ denotes, as usual, the integer part of $x$, and consider

$$
S_{d}(x)=\frac{h}{\sigma} S\left(\frac{x \sigma \sqrt{d}-d a}{h}\right)
$$

Let $F_{d}(z)$ be as above. Then under assumption (1.7) Esseen's result (see Theorem 1 page 43 in [21]) yields

$$
F_{d}(z)-\Phi(z)=\frac{e^{-z^{2} / 2}}{\sqrt{2 \pi}}\left(\frac{S_{d}(z)}{\sqrt{d}}-\frac{\alpha^{3}\left(z^{2}-1\right)}{6 \sigma^{3} \sqrt{d}}\right)+o\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{d}}\right)
$$

uniformly in $z$.
Comparing with (3.3), we observe that one needs only to evaluate the additional term

$$
\begin{aligned}
J & =\frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi d}} \int_{-\infty}^{\theta}\left[-S_{d}(z) e^{-z^{2} / 2}+S_{d}(\theta) e^{-\theta^{2} / 2}\right] \mathrm{d} \Psi_{d}(z) \\
& =\frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi d}} \int_{-\infty}^{\theta} \Psi_{d}(z) \mathrm{d}\left(S_{d}(z) e^{-z^{2} / 2}\right)=J_{1}-J_{2}+J_{3}
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& J_{1}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi d}} \int_{-\infty}^{\theta} \Psi_{d}(z) S_{d}^{\prime}(z) e^{-z^{2} / 2} \mathrm{~d} z \\
& J_{2}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi d}} \int_{-\infty}^{\theta} \Psi_{d}(z) S_{d}(z) z e^{-z^{2} / 2} \mathrm{~d} z
\end{aligned}
$$

and $J_{3}$ is a "discrete part", which is defined in the following way. Notice that $S(x)$ is a periodic function with period one; therefore $S_{d}(x)$ possesses the period $h / \sigma \sqrt{d}$ and
has jumps at points $\left\{\frac{k h+d a}{\sigma \sqrt{d}}, k \in \mathbb{Z}\right\}$. If the point $\theta$ belongs to this lattice, then there exists an integer $k^{\prime}$ such that $\theta=\frac{k^{\prime} h+d a}{\sigma \sqrt{d}}$. Hence, one can integrate the discontinuous part of the integral $J$ with respect to the measure $\frac{h}{\sigma} \delta_{\frac{k h+d a}{}}^{\sigma \sqrt{d}}$ and obtain

$$
J_{3}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi d}} \frac{h}{\sigma} \sum_{k=-\infty}^{k^{\prime}} \Psi_{d}\left(\frac{k h+d a}{\sigma \sqrt{d}}\right) \exp \left\{-\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{k h+d a}{\sigma \sqrt{d}}\right)^{2}\right\} .
$$

We start by estimating $J_{1}$. At the points where the derivative $S_{d}^{\prime}(z)$ exists, one can easily calculate that

$$
S_{d}^{\prime}(z)=\frac{h}{\sigma} S\left(\frac{z \sigma \sqrt{d}-d a}{h}\right)=-\sqrt{d} .
$$

Therefore, as in the nonlattice case, by the Lebesgue dominated convergence theorem we have

$$
\begin{align*}
J_{1} & =\frac{-\sqrt{d}}{\sqrt{2 \pi d}} \int_{-\infty}^{\theta} \exp \{2 \sigma \sqrt{d}(z-\theta)\} \exp \left\{-z^{2} / 2\right\} \mathrm{d} z \\
& =\frac{-1}{\sqrt{2 \pi d}} \int_{0}^{\infty} \exp \left\{-\frac{1}{2}\left(\theta-\frac{y}{\sqrt{d}}\right)^{2}\right\} \exp \{-2 \sigma y\} \mathrm{d} y \\
& =\frac{-1}{2 \sigma \sqrt{2 \pi d}} \exp \left\{-\frac{q^{2}}{2 \sigma^{2}}\right\}(1+o(1)), d \rightarrow \infty, \tag{3.5}
\end{align*}
$$

which yields $\sqrt{d} J_{1}=-\sqrt{d} I_{1}(1+o(1))$.

As for the integral $J_{2}$, this one, for sufficiently large $d$, becomes negligible. Indeed,

$$
\begin{aligned}
J_{2} & =\frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi d}} \int_{-\infty}^{\theta} \exp \{2 \sigma \sqrt{d}(z-\theta)\} S_{d}(z) z \exp \left\{-z^{2} / 2\right\} \mathrm{d} z \\
& =\frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi d}} \frac{1}{\sqrt{d}} \int_{0}^{\infty} \exp \left\{-\frac{1}{2}\left(\theta-\frac{y}{\sqrt{d}}\right)^{2}\right\}\left(\theta-\frac{y}{\sqrt{d}}\right) S_{d}\left(\theta-\frac{y}{\sqrt{d}}\right) \exp \{-2 \sigma y\} \mathrm{d} y \\
& \leq \frac{3 h}{2 \sigma d \sqrt{2 \pi}} \int_{0}^{\infty} \exp \left\{-\frac{1}{2}\left(\theta-\frac{y}{\sqrt{d}}\right)^{2}\right\}\left(\theta-\frac{y}{\sqrt{d}}\right) \exp \{-2 \sigma y\} \mathrm{d} y \\
& =\frac{3 h}{4 \sigma^{2} d \sqrt{2 \pi}}\left(\frac{q}{\sigma}\right)^{2} \exp \left\{-\frac{q^{2}}{2 \sigma^{2}}\right\}(1+o(1)), d \rightarrow \infty .
\end{aligned}
$$

And, of course, $J_{2}=o\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{d}}\right)$.
Now we consider the essential summand

$$
\begin{align*}
J_{3} & =\frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi d}} \frac{h}{\sigma} \sum_{k=-\infty}^{k^{\prime}} \exp \left\{2 \sigma \sqrt{d}\left(\frac{k h+d a}{\sigma \sqrt{d}}-\theta\right)\right\} \exp \left\{-\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{k h+d a}{\sigma \sqrt{d}}\right)^{2}\right\} \\
& =\frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi d}} \frac{h}{\sigma} \sum_{k=-\infty}^{k^{\prime}} \exp \left\{2 h\left(k-k^{\prime}\right)\right\} \exp \left\{-\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{k h+d a}{\sigma \sqrt{d}}\right)^{2}\right\} \\
& =\frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi d}} \frac{h}{\sigma} \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \exp \{-2 h l\} \exp \left\{-\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{\left(k^{\prime}-l\right) h+d a}{\sigma \sqrt{d}}\right)^{2}\right\} \\
& =\frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi d}} \frac{h}{\sigma} \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \exp \{-2 h l\} \exp \left\{-\frac{1}{2}\left(\theta-\frac{l h}{\sigma \sqrt{d}}\right)^{2}\right\} \\
& =\frac{1}{\sigma \sqrt{d}} \frac{h}{\left(1-e^{-2 h}\right)} \frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi}} \exp \left\{-\frac{q^{2}}{2 \sigma^{2}}\right\}(1+o(1)), d \rightarrow \infty . \tag{3.6}
\end{align*}
$$

We obtained

$$
\sqrt{d} J_{3}=\sqrt{d} \frac{2 h}{\left(1-e^{-2 h}\right)} I_{1}(1+o(1)) .
$$

Putting together (3.4), (3.5), and (3.6), we get

$$
n(\varepsilon, d)=\frac{\mathcal{E}^{d} e^{2 q \sqrt{d}}}{\sigma \sqrt{d}} \frac{h}{\left(1-e^{-2 h}\right)} \frac{1}{\sqrt{2 \pi}} \exp \left\{-\frac{q^{2}}{2 \sigma^{2}}\right\}(1+o(1)), \quad d \rightarrow \infty
$$

### 3.4 Appendix. Examples of tensor product-type random fields

This section contains some examples of random fields to which the above general result can be applied.

### 3.4.1 Wiener-Chentsov random field

The Wiener-Chentsov field or the Brownian sheet (see [43]) is a zero-mean Gaussian random function $W^{(d)}$ with covariance function equal to a product of the covariance functions corresponding to the Wiener process $W$ :

$$
\mathcal{K}_{W^{(d)}}(s, t)=\prod_{l=1}^{d} \min \left\{s_{l}, t_{l}\right\}, s=\left(s_{1}, \ldots, s_{d}\right), t=\left(t_{1}, \ldots, t_{d}\right) \in T
$$

Therefore the marginal eigenvalues have the following form:

$$
\lambda_{W ; i}^{2}=(\pi(i-1 / 2))^{-2}, i=1,2, \ldots
$$

### 3.4.2 Completely tucked Brownian sheet

The completely tucked Brownian sheet (the Brownian pillow) is a zero-mean Gaussian random function $B^{(2)}$ with covariance function equal to a product of the covariance functions corresponding to the standard Brownian bridge $B(t)=W(t)-t W(1)$, namely

$$
\mathcal{K}_{B^{(2)}}(s, t)=\prod_{l=1}^{2}\left(\min \left\{s_{l}, t_{l}\right\}-s_{l} t_{l}\right), s, t \in[0,1]^{2}
$$

Respectively, the marginal eigenvalues (see [3]) are equal to

$$
\lambda_{B ; i}^{2}=(\pi i)^{-2}, i=1,2, \ldots
$$

In the literature different terms are in use for this random field. In [73] the term "completely tucked Brownian sheet" is used; in [12] "tied-down Kiefer process" is used; in [34] this field is called "the Brownian pillow".

The notion of "completely tucked Brownian sheet" and its generalization for the case $d>2$ was introduced by Blum, Kiefer, and Rosenblatt [7] as the limit distribution for a functional of an empirical process occurring in nonparametric testing of
independency, the so-called "independence empirical process" (see [73]). Therefore, the $d$-parametric generalization of the completely tucked Brownian sheet is often referred to as the "d-variate Hoeffding, Blum, Kiefer, and Rosenblatt process" (see, for example, [34]). The mention of Hoeffding's name in the term is motivated by the fact that the test studied in [7] is equivalent to the one suggested earlier by Hoeffding in [24]. However, the limiting distribution, the covariance function, the eigenvalues and the eigenfunctions of the respective integral equation were obtained in [7]. Higher-dimensional generalizations were later treated in [15] and [13].

### 3.4.3 Centered Gaussian processes

In some statistical problems it is convenient to use centered empirical processes and corresponding limiting Gaussian processes.

For any Gaussian process $X=\{X(t)\}, t \in[0,1]$ we define the centered process

$$
\dot{X}(t) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} X(t)-\int_{0}^{1} X(u) \mathrm{d} u
$$

The centered Brownian bridge $\stackrel{\circ}{B}$, also referred to in the literature as the Watson process, was introduced in [74] for nonparametric goodness-of-fit testing on a circle. Watson showed that the covariance function is given by

$$
\mathcal{K}_{\dot{B}}(s, t)=\min \{s, t\}-s t+\frac{1}{2}\left(s^{2}+t^{2}-s-t\right)+\frac{1}{12}, s, t \in[0,1]
$$

and the covariance operator with this kernel has a double spectrum, i.e.,

$$
\lambda_{\dot{B} ; 2 i}^{2}=\lambda_{B ;(2 i-1)}^{2}=(2 \pi i)^{-2}, i=1,2, \ldots
$$

The covariance function of the centered Wiener process ${ }^{\circ}$ has the form

$$
\mathcal{K}_{\mathscr{W}}(s, t)=\min \{s, t\}+\frac{1}{2}\left(s^{2}+t^{2}\right)-s-t+\frac{1}{3}, s, t \in[0,1],
$$

and the corresponding eigenvalues coincide with those of the standard Brownian bridge, i.e.,

$$
\lambda_{\tilde{W} ; i}^{2}=\lambda_{B ; i}^{2}=(\pi i)^{-2}, i=1,2, \ldots
$$

This is in accordance with the well-known equality in distribution for the $L_{2}$-norms of the Brownian bridge and the centered Wiener process; see [4].

The centered integrated Brownian bridge

$$
\breve{B}(t)=\bar{B}(t)-\int_{0}^{1} \bar{B}(u) \mathrm{d} u
$$

where

$$
\bar{B}(t)=\int_{0}^{t} B(u) \mathrm{d} u, t \in[0,1]
$$

was considered in a framework of goodness-of-fit testing and small deviation probabilities under the $L_{2}$-norm in [23] and [4], where its covariance function

$$
\mathcal{K}_{\breve{B}}(s, t)=\frac{s t \min \{s, t\}}{2}-\frac{\min \{s, t\}^{3}}{6}-\frac{(s t)^{2}}{4}-\frac{s^{2}+t^{2}}{6}-\frac{s^{4}+t^{4}}{24}+\frac{s^{3}+t^{3}}{6}+\frac{1}{45},
$$

$s, t \in[0,1]$, and eigenvalues

$$
\lambda_{\check{B} ; i}^{2}=(\pi i)^{-4}, i=1,2, \ldots,
$$

were obtained.

### 3.4.4 Multivariate Anderson-Darling processes

The tensor product of Anderson-Darling processes $A^{(d)}(t), t \in[0,1]^{d}$, is a zero-mean Gaussian random function $A^{(d)}(t), t \in[0,1]^{d}$ with covariance function

$$
\mathcal{K}_{A^{(d)}}(s, t)=\prod_{l=1}^{d} \frac{\min \left\{s_{l}, t_{l}\right\}-s_{l} t_{l}}{\sqrt{s_{l}\left(1-s_{l}\right)} \sqrt{t_{l}\left(1-t_{l}\right)}}, s_{l}, t_{l} \in[0,1] .
$$

The eigenvalues of the corresponding covariance operator are given by

$$
\lambda_{\mathbf{k}}^{2}=\prod_{l=1}^{d} \frac{1}{k_{l}\left(k_{l}+1\right)}, \mathbf{k}=\left(k_{1}, \ldots, k_{d}\right) \in \mathbb{N}^{d} .
$$

In the one-dimensional case the Anderson-Darling process coincides in distribution with $\frac{B(t)}{\sqrt{t(1-t)}}, t \in[0,1]$, and was introduced in [3] in the context of goodness-offit testing. Anderson and Darling obtained its covariance function and the exact spectrum.

In [57] another multivariate extension of the Anderson-Darling process, defined as a zero-mean Gaussian process with the covariance function

$$
\mathcal{K}_{A}^{\mu}(s, t)=\left(\frac{\min \{s, t\}-s t}{\sqrt{s(1-s)} \sqrt{t(1-t)}}\right)^{\mu}, s, t \in[0,1], \mu>0
$$

is given.
The eigenvalues of its covariance operator are of the form

$$
\lambda_{\mu, j}^{2}=\frac{\mu}{(\mu+j-1)(\mu+j)}, j=1,2, \ldots
$$

When the parameter $\mu$ is positive integer, the random field, defined in such a way (more precisely, the square of its $L_{2}$-norm), is the limit distribution for Cramér-von Mises-type statistics.

## Bibliography

[1] Adler, R. J. (1990). An Introduction to Continuity, Extrema and Related Topics for General Gaussian Processes. Institute of Mathematical Statistics Lecture Notes - Monograph Series, 12. Institute of Mathematical Statistics, Hayward, CA.
[2] Akaike, H. (1973). Information theory and an extension of the maximum likelihood principle. Second International Symposium on Information Theory (Tsahkadsor, 1971), Akadémiai Kiadó, Budapest 267-281.
[3] Anderson, T. W. and Darling, D. A. (1952). Asymptotic theory of certain "goodness of fit" criteria based on stochastic processes. Ann. Math. Statistics 23 193212.
[4] Beghin, L., Nikitin, Ya. and Orsingher, E. (2003) . Exact small ball constants for some Gaussian processes under the $L^{2}$-norm. Zap. Nauchn. Sem. S.-Peterburg. Otdel. Mat. Inst. Steklov. (POMI) 298 (2003), Veroyatn. i Stat. 6 5-21, 316; translation in J. Math. Sci. (N. Y.) 128:1 (2005) 2493-2502.
[5] Bellman, R. (1961). Adaptive Control Processes: a guided tour. Princeton University, Princeton.
[6] Belomestny, D. and Spokoiny, V. (2007) Spatial aggregation of local likelihood estimates with applications to classification. Ann. Statist. 35 2287-2311.
[7] Blum, J. R., Kiefer, J. and Rosenblatt, M. (1961). Distribution free tests of independence based on the sample distribution function. Ann. Math. Statist. 32:2 485-498.
[8] Brown, L. D. and Low, M. G. (1992). Supperefficiency and lack of adaptability in functional estimation. Technical report, Cornell Univ.
[9] Buslaev, A. P. and Seleznjev, O. V. (1999). On certain extremal problems in the theory of approximation of random processes. East J. Approx. 5:4 467-481.
[10] Butucea, C. (2001). Exact adaptive pointwise estimation on Sobolev classes of densities. ESAIM Probab. Statist. 51-31.
[11] Čížek, P., Härdle, W. and Spokoiny, V. (2009). Adaptive pointwise estimation in time-inhomogeneous conditional heteroscedasticity models. Econometrics Journal 12:2 248 - 271 .
[12] Csörgő, M. and Horváth, L. (1997). Limit Theorems in Change-point Analysis. Wiley, New York.
[13] Deheuvels, P. (1981). An asymptotic decomposition for multivariate distributionfree tests of independence. J. Multivariate Anal. 11:1 102-113.
[14] Donoho, D. L. and Johnstone, I. M. (1994). Ideal spatial adaptation by wavelet shrinkage. Biometrica 81 425-455.
[15] Dugue, D. (1975). Sur des tests d'indépendence "indépendants de la loi". C. R. Acad. Sci. Paris Sér. A-B 281:24 Aii, A1103-A1104.
[16] Fan, J. and Gijbels, I. (1995). Data-driven bandwidth selection in local polynomial fitting: variable bandwidth and spatial adaptation. J. Roy. Statist. Soc. Ser. B 57:2 371-394.
[17] Fan, J. and Gijbels, I. (1996). Local Polynomial Modelling and Its Applications. Monographs on Statistics and Applied Probability, 66. Chapman and Hall, London.
[18] Fan, J., Farmen, M. and Gijbels, I. (1998). Local maximum likelihood estimation and inference. J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B Stat. Methodol. 60:3 591-608.
[19] Fan, J., Zhang, C. and Zhang, J. (2001). Generalized likelihood ratio statistics and Wilks phenomenon. Ann. Statist. 29:1 153-193.
[20] Foi, A. (2005) Anisotropic nonparametric image processing: Theory, algorithms and applications. Ph.D.Thesis, Dip. di Matematica, Politecnico di Milano, Milan, Italy, www.cs.tut.fi/ lasip.
[21] Gnedenko, B. V. and Kolmogorov, A. N. (1954). Limit Distributions for Sums of Independent Random Variables. Translated and annotated by K. L. Chung. With an Appendix by J. L. Doob. Addison-Wesley Publishing Company, Inc., Cambridge, Mass. (in Russian: GTTI, Moscow-Leningrad, 1949).
[22] Goldenshluger, A. and Nemirovski, A. (1994). On spatial adaptive estimation of nonparametric regression. Research report, Technion-Israel Inst. Technology, Haifa, Israel.
[23] Henze, N. and Nikitin, Ya. Yu. (2000). A new approach to goodness-of-fit testing based on the integrated empirical process. J. Nonparametr. Statist. 12:3 391-416.
[24] Hoeffding, W. (1948). A non-parametric test of independence. Ann. Math. Statistisc 19 546-557.
[25] Huber, P. J. (1964). Robust estimation of a location parameter. Ann. Math. Statist. 35 73-101.
[26] Ibragimov, I. A. and Has'minskii, R. Z. (1981). Statistical Estimation. Asymptotic Theory. Applications of Mathematics, 16. Springer-Verlag, New York-Berlin.
[27] Karhunen, K. (1946). Zur Spektraltheorie stochastischer Prozesse. Ann. Acad. Sci. Fennicae, Ser. A. I. Math.-Phys. 34 1-7.
[28] Karhunen, K. (1947). Über lineare Methoden in der Wahrscheinlichkeitsrechnung. Ann. Acad. Sci. Fennicae, Ser. A. I. Math.-Phys. 37 3-79.
[29] Katkovnik, V. Ja. (1979). Linear and nonlinear methods of nonparametric regression analysis. (Russian) Soviet Automat. Control 5 35-46, 93.
[30] Katkovnik, V. Ja. (1983). Convergence of linear and nonlinear nonparametric estimates of "kernel" type. Automat. Remote Control 44:4 495-506; translated from Avtomat. i Telemekh. (1983) 4 108-120 (Russian).
[31] Katkovnik, V. Ja. (1985). Nonparametric Identification and Data Smoothing: Local Approximation Approach. Nauka, Moscow (Russian).
[32] Katkovnik, V., Egiazarian, K. and Astola, J. (2006). Local Approximation Techniques in Signal and Image Processing. Bellingham, WA: SPIE Press.
[33] Katkovnik, V. and Spokoiny, V. (2008). Spatially adaptive estimation via fitted local likelihood techniques. IEEE Trans. Signal Process., 56:3 873-886.
[34] Koning, A. J. and Protasov, V. (2003). Tail behaviour of Gaussian processes with applications to the Brownian pillow. J. Multivariate Anal. 87:2 370-397.
[35] Kosambi, D. D. (1943). Statistics in functional space. J. Indian Math. Soc. (N. S.) 776-88.
[36] Kühn, Th. and Linde, W. (2002). Optimal series representation of fractional Brownian sheets. Bernoulli 8:5 669-696.
[37] Kullback, S. and Leibler, R. A. (1951). On information and sufficiency. Ann. Math. Statistics 22 79-86.
[38] Lepskii, O. V. (1990). A problem of adaptive estimation in Gaussian white noise. (Russian) Teor. Veroyatnost. i Primenen. 35:3 459-470; translation in Theory Probab. Appl. 35:3 454-466.
[39] Lepskii, O. V. (1991). Asymptotic minimax adaptive estimation. I. Upper bounds. Optimally adaptive estimates. (Russian). Teor. Veroyatnost. i Primenen. 36:4 645-659; translation in Theory Probab. Appl. 36:4 682-697.
[40] Lepskii, O. V. (1992). Asymptotic minimax adaptive estimation. II. Schemes without optimal adaptation. Adaptive estimates. (Russian) Teor. Veroyatnost. $i$ Primenen. 37:3 468-481; translation in Theory Probab. Appl. 37:3 433-448.
[41] Lepski, O. V., Mammen, E. and Spokoiny, V. G. (1997). Optimal spatial adaptation to inhomogeneous smoothness: an approach based on kernel estimates with variable bandwidth selectors. Ann. Stat. 25:3 929-947.
[42] Lepski, O. V. and Spokoiny, V. G. (1997). Optimal pointwise adaptive methods in nonparametric estimation. Ann. Stat. 25:6 2512-2546.
[43] Lifshits, M. A. (1995). Gaussian Random Functions. Mathematics and its Applications, 322. Kluwer Academic Publishers, Dordrecht.
[44] Lifshits, M. A. and Tulyakova, E. V. (2006). Curse of dimensionality in approximation of random fields. Probab. Math. Statist. 26:1 97-112.
[45] Loader, C. (1999). Local Regression and Likelihood. Statistics and Computing. Springer-Verlag, New York.
[46] Loève, M. (1946). Fonctions aléatoires de second ordre. Revue Sci. 84 195-206.
[47] Mathé, P.(2006). The Lepskii principle revisited. Inverse Problems 22:3 L11L15.
[48] Mercurio, D. and Spokoiny, V. (2004). Statistical inference for timeinhomogeneous volatility models. Ann. Statist. 32:2 577-602.
[49] Novak, E. and Woźniakowski, H. (2008). Tractability of Multivariate Problems. Vol. 1: Linear Information. EMS Tracts in Mathematics, 6. European Mathematical Society (EMS), Zürich.
[50] Obukhov, A. M. (1954). Statistical description of continuous fields. (Russian) Tr. geophis. Inst. Akad. Nauk SSSR 24(151) 3-42.
[51] Traub, J. F., Wasilkowski, G. W. and Woźniakowski, H. (1988). Informationbased Complexity. With contributions by A. G. Werschulz and T. Boult. Computer Science and Scientific Computing. Academic Press, Inc., Boston, MA.
[52] Traub, J. F. and Werschulz, A. G. (1998). Complexity and Information. Lezioni Lincee. [Lincei Lectures] Cambridge University Press, Cambridge.
[53] Petrov, V. V. (1975). Sums of Independent Random Variables. Translated from the Russian by A. A. Brown. Ergebnisse der Mathematik und ihrer Grenzgebiete, Band 82. Springer-Verlag, New York-Heidelberg.
[54] Petrov, Valentin V. (1995). Limit Theorems of Probability Theory. Sequences of Independent Random Variables. Oxford Studies in Probability, 4. Oxford Science Publications. The Clarendon Press, Oxford University Press, New York. (in Russian: Nauka, Moscow, 1987).
[55] Polzehl, J. and Spokoiny, V. (2006). Propagation-separation approach for local likelihood estimation. Probab. Theory Relat. Fields 135 335-362.
[56] Pougachev, V. S. (1953). General theory of the correlations of random functions. Izv. Akad. Nauk SSSR, Ser. Math. 17:5 401-420.
[57] Pycke, J.-R. (2003). Multivariate extensions of the Anderson-Darling process. Stat. Probab. Lett. 63:4 387-399.
[58] Reiss, M., Rozenholc, Y., Cuenod, C.-A. (2009). Pointwise adaptive estimation for robust and quantile regression. arXiv:0904.0543v1.
[59] Ritter, K. (2000). Average-case Analysis of Numerical Problems. Lecture Notes in Mathematics 1733. Springer-Verlag, Berlin.
[60] Sabelfeld, K. (2007). Expansion of random boundary excitations for elliptic PDEs. Monte Carlo Methods Appl. 13:5-6 405-453.
[61] Serdyukova, N. A. (2009). Dependence on the dimension for complexity of approximation of random fields. (Russian) Teor. Veroyatnost. i Primenen. 54:2 256-270; translation in Theory Probab. Appl. (2010) 54:2 272-284.
[62] Serdyukova, N. A. (2009). Local parametric estimation under noise misspecification in regression. arXiv:0912.4489.
[63] Spokoiny, V. G. (1998). Estimation of a function with discontinuities via local polynomial fit with an adaptive window choice. Ann. Statist. 26:4 1356-1378.
[64] Spokoiny, V. (2002). Variance estimation for high-dimensional regression models. J. Multivariate Anal. 82 111-133.
[65] Spokoiny, V. (2009). Multiscale local change point detection with applications to Value-at-Risk. Ann. Statist. 37 1405-1436.
[66] Spokoiny, V. and Vial, C. (2009). Parameter tuning in pointwise adaptation using a propagation approach. Ann. Statist. 37:5B 2783-2807.
[67] Traub, J. F. and Werschulz, A. G. (1998). Complexity and information. Lezioni Lincee. [Lincei Lectures] Cambridge University Press, Cambridge.
[68] Triebel, H. (1992). Theory of function spaces. II. Monographs in Mathematics, 84. Birkhäuser Verlag, Basel.
[69] Tsybakov, A. B. (1982). Nonparametric signal estimation when there is incomplete information on the noise distribution. Problems of Information Transmission 18:2, 116-130.
[70] Tsybakov, A. B. (1982). Robust estimates of a function. Problems of Information Transmission 18:3 190-201.
[71] Tsybakov, A. B. (1986). Robust reconstruction of functions by the localapproximation method. Problems of Information Transmission 22:2 133-146.
[72] Tsybakov, A. B. (2009). Introduction to Nonparametric Estimation. Springer Series in Statistics. Springer-Verlag, New York. or Introduction l'estimation non-paramtrique. (French) [Introduction to nonparametric estimation] Mathmatiques \& Applications (Berlin) [Mathematics \& Applications], 41. SpringerVerlag, Berlin, 2004.
[73] van der Vaart, A. W. and Wellner J. A. (1996). Weak Convergence and Empirical Processes. With Applications to Statistics. Springer Series in Statistics. SpringerVerlag, New York.
[74] Watson, G. S. (1961). Goodness-of-fit tests on a circle. Biometrika 48 109-114.
[75] White, H. (1982). Maximum likelihood estimation of misspecified models. Econometrica 50:1 1-25.
[76] Woźniakowski, H. (1992). Average case complexity of linear multivariate problems. Part 1: Theory. Part 2: Applications. J. Complexity 8:4 337-372 and 373-392.
[77] Woźniakowski, H. (1994). Tractability and strong tractability of linear multivariate problems. J. Complexity 10:1 96-128.
[78] Woźniakowski, H. (1994). Tractability and strong tractability of multivariate tensor product problems. J. of Computing and Information 4-19.
[79] Woźniakowski, H. (2006). Tractability of multivariate problems for weighted spaces of functions. Approximation and Probability, Banach Center Publ., 72 407-427.

## Index of notation

## Sets

$\emptyset$
$\#\{\cdot\}$
$A \cap B$
the empty set
cardinality of the set $\{\cdot\}$
intersection, $\{x: x \in A$ and $x \in B\}$

## Special functions

$\Gamma(\cdot)$
$\Phi(\cdot)$

## Landau notation

$f(x)=o(g(x)), x \rightarrow x_{0} \quad$ means that $\lim _{x \rightarrow x_{0}} f(x) / g(x)=0$
$f(x)=\mathcal{O}(g(x)), x \rightarrow x_{0} \quad$ means that $|f(x)| \leq C|g(x)|$, as $x \rightarrow x_{0}$

## Linear algebra

| $\gamma^{\top}, A^{\top}$ | transpose of the vector $\gamma$ or of the matrix $A$ |
| :---: | :---: |
| $\lambda_{j}(A)$ | $j$ th eigenvalue of $A$ |
| $\lambda_{1}(A), \lambda_{\max }(A)$ | largest eigenvalue of the symmetric matrix $A$ |
| $\operatorname{tr}(A)$ | trace of $A$, the sum of the diagonal elements of square matrix $A$ |
| $\operatorname{rank}(A)$ | rank of $A$ |
| $\operatorname{dim} \mathcal{U}$ | dimension of the vector space $\mathcal{U}$ |
| $\mathcal{C}(A)$ | column space of $A$, the space spanned by the columns of $A$ |
| $\\|\gamma\\|$ | $L_{2}$ vector norm, Euclidean norm |
| $\\|A\\|$ | induced matrix norm based on $L_{2}$ vector norm (p. 31) |
| $A \preceq B$ | $B-A \succeq 0$, Löwner partial ordering (p. 32) |
| $A \succ 0$ | $A$ is positive definite, $\gamma^{\top} A \gamma>0$ for $x \neq 0$ |
| $A \succeq 0$ | $A$ is nonnegative definite, $\gamma^{\top} A \gamma \geq 0$ |
| $A^{-1}$ | inverse of $A$ when $A$ is nonsingular |
| $\operatorname{det} A$ | determinant of a square matrix $A$ |
| $A \otimes B$ | Kronecker product of $A$ and $B$ (p. 40) |
| $\operatorname{diag}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right)$ | $n \times n$ matrix with diagonal elements $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}$ |
|  | and zeros elsewhere |
| vec $A$, | if $A$ is an $m \times n$ matrix, then $\operatorname{vec} A$ is an $m n \times 1$ vector |
|  | formed by writing the columns of $A$ one below the other |
| $\kappa(A)$ | $\kappa_{2}(A)$ conditional number of the positive definite matrix $A$, $\kappa(A) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \lambda_{\max }(A) / \lambda_{\min }(A)$ |

## Probability and statistics

| $\delta_{x}$ | Dirac measure on $x$ |
| :--- | :--- |
| $\stackrel{\text { d }}{=}$ | equality in distribution |
| a.s. | almost surely |
| $\mathbb{I}\{\cdot\}$ | indicator of the set $\{\cdot\}$ |
| $\mathcal{N}(0,1)$ | the standard normal distribution |
| $\phi(\cdot)$ | density of the distribution $\mathcal{N}(0,1)$ |
| $\mathcal{N}\left(0, I_{n}\right)$ | standard normal distribution in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ |
| $\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\theta}, \Sigma)$ | normal distribution with mean $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ and covariance matrix $\Sigma$ |
| $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}=\underset{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta}{\operatorname{argmax} \mathrm{L}(\boldsymbol{\theta})}$ | means that $\mathrm{L}(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}})=\max _{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \Theta} \mathrm{L}(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ |
| $\operatorname{MSE}$ | mean squared risk at a point |
| $\mathbb{K} \mathbb{L}\left(P, P_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)$ | Kullback-Leibler divergence between the measures $P$ and $P_{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \quad(\mathrm{p} .23)$ |

## Assumptions

$(\mathfrak{L p ı})-(\mathfrak{L} \mathfrak{p} 4)$
p. 10
$(\mathfrak{D})$
p. 22
$(\mathfrak{L o c})$
p. 23
$(\mathcal{W})$
p. 24
Propagation conditions $(P C)$ p. 28
(S)
p. 29
(Sı) p. 49
(SMB)
p. 42
(SMBj)
p. 54
$\left(\mathfrak{L p ı} \mathbf{1}^{\prime}\right)-\left(\mathfrak{L p} 4^{\prime}\right) \quad$ p. $59-60$
$\left(\mathfrak{L p} \mathbf{1}^{\mathrm{d}}\right)$
p. 49

## Erklärung

Ich erkläre, dass ich die dem angestrebten Verfahren zugrunde liegende Promotionsordnung (Amtliches Mitteilungsblatt Nr. 34/2006) kenne.

Ich erkläre, dass ich vorliegende Arbeit selbständig und nur unter Verwendung der angegebenen Literatur und Hilfsmittel angefertigt habe.

Ich habe mich anderwärts noch nicht um einen Doktorgrad beworben, und ich besitze keinen Doktorgrad in dem Promotionsfach.

Nora Serdyukova
Berlin, 24. May 2010.

